

ANAPHORA PILATI. From No. 445.  
(From a photograph by M. D. Gibson.)

STUDIA SINAITICA No. V.  
APOCRYPHA SINAITICA.

- I. ANAPHORA PILATI  
THREE RECENSIONS  
(IN SYRIAC AND ARABIC)
- II. RECOGNITIONS OF CLEMENT  
TWO RECENSIONS
- III. MARTYRDOM OF CLEMENT
- IV. THE PREACHING OF PETER
- V. MARTYRDOM OF JAMES SON OF ALPHEUS
- VI. PREACHING OF SIMON SON OF CLEOPHAS
- VII. MARTYRDOM OF SIMON SON OF CLEOPHAS  
IN ARABIC

*EDITED AND TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH*

BY

MARGARET DUNLOP GIBSON, M.R.A.S.

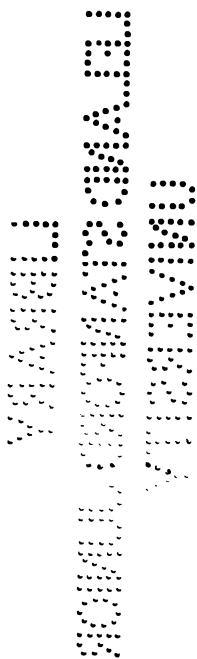
LONDON:  
C. J. CLAY AND SONS,  
CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE,  
AVE MARIA LANE.

1896

*[All Rights reserved.]*

Cambridge:  
PRINTED BY J. AND C. F. CLAY  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

102537



CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Introduction . . . . .	vii

TEXTS.

Anaphora Pilati, Syriac . . . . .	ⲛ
"    "    Arabic r. A. from No. 445 (A.D. 799) . . . . .	1
"    "    "    r. B. from No. 508 . . . . .	1
Recognitions of Clement, Arabic, from No. 508 . . . . .	13
"    "    "    from XXVIII. (Add. 9965), British Museum, A.D. 1569 . . . . .	29
Martyrdom of Clement, Arabic . . . . .	40
Preaching of Peter, Arabic, from No. 445 . . . . .	00
Martyrdom of James the son of Alphaeus, Arabic, from No. 539 . . . . .	13
Preaching of Simon son of Cleophas, Arabic, from No. 539 . . . . .	10
Martyrdom of Simon " " " " " . . . . .	18

TRANSLATIONS.

From the Syriac <i>Anaphora Pilati</i> , with passages from the Arabic . . . . .	1
"    Recognitions of Clement (Sinai) . . . . .	15
"    Recognitions of Clement (Brit. Mus.) . . . . .	29
Martyrdom of Clement . . . . .	44
A. P. . . . .	b

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
The Preaching of Peter . . . . .	52
Martyrdom of James the son of Alphaeus . . . . .	60
Preaching of Simon son of Cleophas . . . . .	62
Martyrdom of Simon „ „ . . . . .	65

ILLUSTRATIONS.

Anaphora Pilati, Arabic, No. 445 . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
„ „ „ No. 508 . . . . .	<i>to face first page of Arabic</i>
Recognitions of Clement (Sinai) . . . . .	<i>to face page ٢٩</i>
Date-page of No. 445 . . . . .	<i>„ page ٥٥</i>

## INTRODUCTION.

### ANAPHORA PILATI.

THE Anaphora Pilati, with its sequel, the Paradosis Pilati, has been edited by Tischendorf (*Evangelia Apocrypha*, Leipzig, 1876) from various Greek MSS. of dates ranging from the 12th

---

Mrs Gibson desires to express her regret that she made a mistake with regard to the Arabic MS. No. 445. Owing to pressure of work during the last two days of her stay at the Convent in 1895 she photographed the wrong page of this MS. for the date. The real date is on another page in the centre of the book, and is A.D. 1155.

λελεγμένων. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦτα· Τῇ παρουσίᾳ αὐτοῦ ἀλείται χυλὸς ὥς ἑλαφος, καὶ τρανὴ ἔσται γλῶσσα μογιάλων· τυφλοὶ ἀναβλέψουσι, καὶ λεπροὶ καθαρισθήσονται, καὶ νεκροὶ ἀναστήσονται καὶ περιπατήσουσιν. Ὅτι τε ταῦτα ἐποίησεν, ἐκ τῶν ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου γενομένων αὐτῷ μαθεῖν δύνασθε.

**Tertullian (A.D. 150–220) says :**

Apologeticus, c. 21. "Ea omnia super Christo Pilatus, et ipse iam pro sua conscientia Christianus, Caesari tunc Tiberio nuntiavit." Here a written document is assumed, but it may be only an inference from the language of Justin.

In the Syriac sermon of Simon Cepha (Cureton, *Ancient Syriac Documents*) we read, with an evident appeal to extant documents,

[illegible]

*Translation* (Cureton, p. 38). "And inasmuch as ye saw the sun become darkened at his death, ye yourselves also are

witnesses. But the earth shook when he was slain, and the vail was rent at his death; and touching these things the Governor Pilate also was witness, for he sent and made them known to Caesar, and these things, and more than these, were read before him and before the princes of your city. And on this account Caesar was angry against Pilate, because he had unjustly been persuaded by the Jews, and for this reason he sent and took away from him the authority which he had given to him. And this same thing was published abroad and made known in all the dominion of the Romans. What therefore Pilate saw and made known to Caesar and to your honourable Senate, the same I preach and declare, and my fellow Apostles. And ye know that Pilate could not have written to the Government anything which did not take place and he saw with his own eyes: but that which did take place and was done in reality, the same he wrote and made known."

Lipsius, who has made a thorough examination of the subject, does not allow that the *Acta Pilati* and their sequels go back to an earlier date than the end of the fourth century. Tischendorf, on the other hand, believed them to go back to the second, and his opinion is supported by that of M. Nicolas (*Études sur les Évangiles Apocryphes*, pp. 360, 361). Even Lipsius's remarks, however, apply chiefly to the *Acta*, and he is inclined to give an earlier date to the *Anaphora*. He allows that magical ideas were rife among the Christians of the second century, and that it would be quite natural for them to imagine that the Roman idols fell down literally, as they did metaphorically, at the name of Jesus. He points out a trace of Marcionite ideas in the liberation of spirits from Hades, though he also says that this is counterbalanced by the said liberation being limited to patriarchs and prophets, instead of being extended to Old Testament evil-doers as well.

The *Anaphora* corresponds better with the documents mentioned by Justin than the *Acta* do, and better still with those mentioned by Tertullian. It has a rival for that honour in the shape of a letter from Pilate to Claudius, embedded in



the Acta Petri et Pauli. It is evident, however, that our Lord suffered in the time of Tiberius.

The recent discovery of the pseudo-Gospel of Peter throws a corroborative light on some of the statements in the Anaphora. For example :

Anaph. Pilati (Tischendorf, Ev. Apoc. rec. B.). Ἐν παντὶ τῷ κόσμῳ, ἦσαν λύχνους ἀπὸ ἑκτῆς ὥρας ἕως ὀψίας.

Ev. Petri, c. 10. τῶν μὲν δύο τὴν κεφαλὴν χωροῦσαν μέχρι τοῦ οὐρανοῦ.

Syriac, page ၈, lines 9, 10. ܠܚܝܬܐ ܕܡܪܝܢ ܕܥܝܪܐ  
ܕܥܝܪܐ ܕܥܝܪܐ ܕܥܝܪܐ ܕܥܝܪܐ

**Ev. Petri, c. 9. Μεγάλη φωνὴ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ.**

Syriac, p. 8, ll. 12, 13. ܐܡܠܝܢ ܕܥܡܝܢ ܕܝܚ ܕܥܡܝܢ  
ܕܥܡܝܢ ܕܥܡܝܢ ܕܥܡܝܢ.

**Ev. Petri, c. 10. Ἐκήρυξας τοῖς κοιμωμένοις;**

Syriac, p. 10, ll. 15, 16. ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ  
ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ.

The Arabic has also an allusion to this (pp. 1, 1, l. 21)  
وامر الجحير.

The connexion of the Anaphora with the Peter-Gospel will be found worked out at length in von Schubert (*Peter-Gospel*, p. 182, with reference to Robinson, p. 26, n. 1). Besides the important coincidences we have mentioned, he notices some minor points.

1. Ev. Petri, c. 1. Καὶ τότε κελεύει Ἡρώδης ὁ Βασιλεὺς παρ[αλημ]φθῆναι τὸν Κύριον.

Anaph. Pilati, r. A. p. 439. Τοῦτον δὲ Ἡρώδης καὶ Ἀρχέ-  
λαος...παρέδωκάν μοι. r. B. p. 446. Τοῦτον οὖν Ἡρώδης...  
παραδεδώκασί μοι.

Syriac, p. 1, ll. 3, 4. ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ  
ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ.

Arabic, pp. 1, 1, l. 4. فلها هيرودس وارشلوس وقيلس مع  
جميع الشعب اسلموه الي

2. Ev. Petri, c. 5. Ἦν δὲ μεσημβρία, καὶ σκότος κατέσχε  
πᾶσαν τὴν Ἰουδαίαν.

Anaph. Pilati, r. A. p. 439. τοῦ ἡλίου μέσης ἡμέρας σκοτισ-  
θέντος. r. B. p. 446. τοῦ ἡλίου κρυβέντος τελείως καὶ τοῦ  
πόλου σκοτεινοῦ φαινομένου ἡμέρας οὔσης.

Syriac, p. 1, ll. 12, 13. ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ  
ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ.

Arabic, pp. 1, 1, ll. 7, 8. فلها صارت ظلمة على الدنيا  
كلها واظلمت الشمس نصف النهار

3. Ev. Petri, c. 14. ἀπήλθαμεν εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν.

Anaph. Pilati (Tischendorf, r. A.). εἶπατε τοῖς μαθηταῖς μου  
ὅτι προάγει ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν Γαλιλαίαν, ἐκεῖ αὐτὸν ὄψεσθε.

Syriac, p. 1, ll. 1, 2. ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ  
ܡܠܟܐ ܕܡܪܝܡ ܕܡܪܝܡ.

Arabic, pp. 1, 1, l. 2. قولوا للتلاميذ ان يتقدموني الى الجليل

Von Schubert is led by his study of these documents to the conclusion that Pseudo-Peter, as well as Justin Martyr, was acquainted with some form of the Anaphora Pilati, and this would give a very early date to the kernel of these legends. It may be mentioned, as a vestige of them, that Pilate is canonized as a saint by the Abyssinian Church. See Stanley (*Eccl. Hist.* p. 13), and Neale (*Hist. of the Eastern Church*, p. 806).

I have been favoured by the Rev. Arthur Baker, R.N., with an account of a sheet of parchment, the sole remnant of an Ethiopic MS. unfortunately lost in the foundering of H.M.S. *Captain*, which contains a somewhat grotesque representation of Pilate in an attitude of prayer, and which describes first a controversy between Pilate and the Jews at the tomb of our Lord, and then (after a considerable hiatus in the MS.) the following words are put into Pilate's mouth (the translation being by Dr Montague R. James, of King's College): "I believe that Thou hast risen, and hast appeared to me, and Thou wilt not judge me, O my Lord, because I acted for Thee, fearing this from the Jews. And it is not that I deny Thy resurrection, O my Lord. I believe in Thy word, and in the mighty works which Thou didst work amongst them when Thou wast alive. Thou didst raise many dead. Therefore, O my God, be not angry with me because of what Thou didst...."

An account of this curious parchment was published by Mr Baker in the *Newbery House Magazine* for December, 1892.

The Anaphora, therefore, rests on a very complicated tradition, towards the determination of whose primitive form and subsequent history every version contributes.

The Syriac text published in this volume was copied by Mr J. Rendel Harris in 1893, from a late paper MS. (13th century?) in the library of St Katharine's Convent on Mount Sinai, No. 82 in Mrs Lewis's catalogue. The correspondence between Pilate and Herod, which follows it in the MS., has already been published by Wright (*Contributions to the Apocryphal Literature of the New Testament*, 1865) from a MS. in the British Museum (Add. 14,609).

The Arabic texts, which are probably translated from a Greek original approaching nearly to Tischendorf's recension A., possess a higher antiquity than the Greek texts published by him. The first one (A.) I took from a volume (No. 508 in my catalogue) consisting of 151 paper leaves, with 5 vellum leaves inserted, 20 centimètres by 15, which contained:

1. The Recognitions of Clement, as published in the present volume.
2. A sermon of St Dorotheus.
3. Histories of Holy Monks.
4. A story about the garments of our Lord.
5. Some ordinances of Mar Isaiah.
6. A sermon of Mar Isaac.
7. Another sermon.
8. The Anaphora and Paradosis Pilati.
9. Sermons by various Fathers, amongst others Anastasius Abbot of Sinai, and Thaumasius.
10. Another book attributed to Clement, akin to that known as the Book of Adam and Eve. (This I have copied.)
11. Songs of the Angels (also copied.)
12. Sermon of St John Chrysostom.

The last leaves of this book being lost, it was not possible to find the date. It was in 1893 that I made its acquaintance. When its text of the Anaphora was already in print, I visited Sinai for the third time with my sister in the early part of this year (1895) and I gladly seized the opportunity thus afforded to compare my transcripts with the MSS. I then found a charming little volume (No. 445) dated A.H. 183 (A.D. 799) which contained the Anaphora, as well as the text entitled "The Preaching of Peter," and which is thus four centuries earlier than any of the Greek texts hitherto known. The date A.D. 1233 which I had erroneously assigned to the book in making my rough catalogue two years previously, is

merely a date inscribed by an appreciative visitor. Lest there should be any doubt on the subject, I give a fac-simile of the page on which the date occurs\*. I resolved not to give a mere collation of this the oldest text, but to print it side by side with the one from No. 508 already in type, marking the former as A. and the latter as B. Which is the earlier of the two recensions, seeing that the date of B. is lost, must be decided on palaeographical grounds alone. I cannot find anything similar to B. in the Palaeographical Society's publications. In Arabic as in Syriac a *yā* may be extended by a copyist so as to become a *lam*. This has evidently been the case with the name قيافاريس p. 2 A. where in B. p. 1 I at first read it قيافارلس. On the other hand, the word صالحين p. 9 A. is in B. p. 4 correctly صايحين.

Apocryphal as the story contained in the Anaphora Pilati is, we trust we have said enough to shew its undoubted claim to antiquity. We cannot but admire the author's truly Christian appreciation of the scope of Divine forgiveness, which could soften even Pilate's heart, and number him with the redeemed, like others perhaps more guilty still (Acts ii. 23-41). The Greek and Arabic recensions are free from any sentiment not fully authorized by Apostolic teaching.

### THE RECOGNITIONS OF CLEMENT.

THE Recognitions of the Roman Clement are too well known in their Latin as well as in their English dress to need any introduction to the scholar. They have been extant hitherto only in the Latin translation of Rufinus of Aquileia, who died A.D. 410†. It was first published by Sichardus (Basle, 1526) and since then by Cotelier (*Apostolic Fathers*, Paris, 1672), and by Gersdorf (Leipzig, 1838). A Syriac translation was also

\* See page ...

† Rufinus states in the preface to his work that he undertook it at the request of Sylvia (the pilgrim to Mount Sinai).

published by de Lagarde in 1861, from two MSS. in the British Museum, the older of which was written at Edessa, A.D. 411. The Greek original used by Rufinus was prefaced by a letter from Clement to James the Lord's brother, bishop of Jerusalem, which Rufinus left out, believing it to be of a later date.

The Arabic text given in this volume is contained in the MS. No. 508 of the Sinai Catalogue, and is, compared to Rufinus's Latin text, a very short narrative. It omits almost wholly the discourses of Peter, and his discussions with Simon and others. It would therefore be out of place here to do more than allude to the question of the priority of the Recognitions or of the Clementine Homilies to one another, a question which has been debated with so much acumen by A. Schliemann, Hilgenfeld, Uhlhorn, Ritschl, Lehmann, Lipsius and others. Suffice it to say that through the labours of Uhlhorn, Hilgenfeld and Ritschl, it is now pretty generally acknowledged that, as Lehmann suggested, the three first books of the Recognitions are the original document from which the Homilies were composed, and that Books IV.-X. of the Recognitions were afterwards added from the Homilies (Lehmann, *Die Clementinischen Schriften*, p. 21).

As to the date of the text and its origin, we have internal evidence only to rely upon, though it is evident from the date of the Syriac MS. Add. 12,150 in the British Museum that it cannot be later than the fourth century. Hilgenfeld has pointed out that Matthidia was the name of the sister of Trajan, mother-in-law of Hadrian; and that the name Faustina was borne by the wife of Antoninus Pius, as well as by her daughter, the wife of Marcus Aurelius. The busts of these two ladies may be seen in the British Museum. This suggests a date between A.D. 150 and 170. The Recognitions, or a document closely allied to them, are quoted by Origen, *Philocalia*, c. XXIII., *Commentary on Genesis* 21, which was written A.D. 231.

καὶ Κλήμης δὲ ὁ Ῥωμαῖος Πέτρου τοῦ Ἀποστόλου μαθητῆς  
 συνφθὰ τούτοις ἐν τῷ παρόντι προβλήματι πρὸς τὸν πατέρα ἐν  
 Λαοδικείᾳ εἰπὼν ἐν ταῖς περιόδοις, ἀναγκαιότατόν τι ἐπὶ τέλει τῶν

περὶ τούτου λόγων, φησὶν, περὶ τῶν τῆς γενέσεως δοκούντων  
ἐκβεβηκέναι, λόγῳ τεσσαρεσκαίδεκάτῳ, καὶ ὁ πατήρ.

Then follows a long quotation, evidently from the Greek text translated by Rufinus, Book X. a. 10, 11, 12-23. It is given in full by Robinson, *The Philocalia of Origen*, Cambridge, 1893.

All writers on the subject seem to agree that Syria is the place of the origin of these documents, and that the author was a Jewish Christian, who held doctrines distinctly Ebionistic. This Arabic text does not go so deeply into questions of dogma as the Latin or even the Syriac texts; yet even here we have the superstitious reverence attached to water both in baptism and ablutions; also the refusal of baptized Christians to eat with unbaptized Christians; insomuch that Peter is represented as continuing in the same narrow frame of mind for which his brother-Apostle found it necessary to rebuke him (Galatians ii. 11-14). The Arabic text is, however, free from the outrageously heathenish idea that Faustinian's face was changed by Simon Magus to look like his own; and the still more heathenish idea that an Apostle could be guilty of a pious fraud by turning the metamorphosis to account.

A. Schliemann has also pointed out that the hierarchical ideas in the Recognitions point to a Jewish Ebionistic origin. Peter appoints a bishop off-hand, and also presbyters and deacons, the former of whom are of the mystical number twelve. It deserves to be noted, however, that this Arabic text does not take its actors to Rome, but seems to imply that they remained in Syria; and it therefore does not attribute to Peter any breach of the covenant made with Paul (Gal. ii. 9). Nor does it contain any mention of James the bishop of Jerusalem, to whom the Greek text used by Rufinus was addressed.

It is quite possible that this Arabic text is an epitome by some Arab Christian monk who was more fascinated by the interest of the narrative than anxious to edify his brethren by translating the discourses. If so, we must grant that he has shewn considerable literary skill, and has fully appreciated the

dramatic side of his documents. As to the story itself, there is nothing absolutely impossible in it. Communication between Rome and Athens was comparatively frequent in the days of the Empire; and if mere tent-makers like Priscilla and Aquila could have interests in several cities and countries, there is nothing unlikely in a noble Roman lady taking her children to Athens for their education and her own convenience. The only circumstance that in my humble judgment seems somewhat improbable, is that Faustinian should have been for several days in the island of Aradus, and have time to carry on a philosophical discussion with Peter's young followers: and yet that he and his wife should have needed Peter's intervention to recognize one another.

I have found another version of this Clement story in the British Museum XXVIII. (Add. 9965), bearing the comparatively late date of A.D. 1659, and followed by an account of Clement's martyrdom, by the same hand. The codex containing them is a paper 4to. of 235 leaves, the greater part being by the hand of Macarius, Patriarch of Antioch, the remainder by his disciple Paulus. I have thought it worth while to transcribe and translate them, because they shew the later development of the legend. I note the following variations between this MS. and the Sinai one:

1. In S. the name of Clement's father is Faustinus, in B.M. Fafestus; there is also a difference in the name of his eldest brother.
2. S. makes Clement meet and befriend Barnabas in Rome, whereas B.M. makes this happen at Alexandria.
3. In S. Clement is baptized before he meets his mother, in B.M. he is baptized along with her; S. makes Peter command Clement to fast for three days before his baptism, B.M. extends this period to three months, and makes Peter act very inconsistently in baptizing the people of Aradus without any such delay.
4. S. makes Matthidia give false names to her husband's



birth-place and her own, as well as to her sons; whereas B.M. makes her tell the true names at once. Perhaps the editor from whom Macarius translated felt that Peter's presence was a dangerous quarter in which to tell falsehoods.

5. In S. Niceta and Aquila reveal their identity at once when Peter has finished their mother's story, indeed, they have scarcely been able to restrain themselves throughout it; whereas in B.M. they are silent and lost in thought for hours afterwards. This is surely an artificial touch.

6. S. is quite free from the ungodly idea contained in B.M. and in the text of Rufinus, that an Apostle could be guilty of the stratagem of sending Clement's father to Antioch in the likeness of Simon.

7. S. does not take Peter and Clement to Rome at all; whereas B.M. makes the former formally instal the latter as his successor in its bishopric.

8. S. makes no mention of James the Lord's brother at all, whereas the narrative in B.M. is addressed to him.

I have placed marginal references to both the Recognitions and Homilies alongside the text of both S. and B.M. These must by no means be considered to imply perfect agreement, but only be used to facilitate comparison.

The Martyrdom of Clement, which follows the story of the Recognitions in the British Museum MS., can be interesting only to the student of folk-lore. The story of the Saint's providing water has a curious likeness to the modern experience of the veteran missionary Dr J. G. Paton, in the New Hebrides; the submarine temple suggests submerged ruins; and the miracle of the sea retreating would suggest an effect of the tides, had we the Atlantic to deal with instead of the Euxine.

The writing of this MS. is small and clear, final *kays* being very insignificant. A curious peculiarity is Macarius's incapability of spelling words from the roots *حضر* and *فعل* correctly; he invariably substitutes *ظ* for *ض* in both, though I have not convicted him of doing likewise in any other word. I have a

suspicion that he occasionally places the *ta* of the 8th form of the verb before its first root-letter instead of after it, as in  
 اتعلمنا p. ٣٩, l. 4; اتزوجت p. ٤٠, l. 15; اتجادل p. ٤١, l. 6;  
 اتعرفا p. ٤٢, l. 20; واتقنوا p. ٤٣, l. 22; اتشفعى p. ٤٨, l. 23;  
 اتناول p. ٥٠, l. 21; فاتناول p. ٥١, l. 2.

As it is possible, however, to treat the prefixed *Alif* as an interjection, and refer the verb to the 5th form, I have given Macarius the benefit of the doubt.

The only word for which I have been able to find no solution is القويص f. 197 b. l. 11.

#### THE PREACHING OF PETER.

THIS story is from the same Codex No. 445, dated A.D. 799, from which I took recension A. of the *Anaphora Pilati*. It is a lively example of how mediæval monks managed to slake the universal human thirst for fiction. Probably such tales took a similar place within the cloistered fane to the modern religious novel in Puritan families; they were also quite as harmless and even more edifying.

The short biographies of James the son of Alphaeus and of Simon the son of Cleophas are from the Codex No. 539 in my catalogue. They are evidently almost purely legendary, and it does not seem to have occurred to their author that Alphaeus and Cleophas might possibly be the same person; had they been two individuals, Simon would have had a more certain relationship to the Lord than James. I was attracted to these tales from curiosity to see what might be the idea current amongst early Arab Christians in regard to the nature of that relationship, but they give no hint on a subject so profoundly interesting to us. I saw in the same volume a short biography of "James the Lord's brother," which I regret not having had time to copy, and I hope that any Arabic scholar who may go to Sinai will repair

this omission. Throughout the whole of these Arabic texts I have made no alteration from the MSS. except the change of final ا to ي, where the latter is now customary, and printing من اجل in full for the contracted form من اجل.

Neglect of the subjunctive mood is so common to all these old Arabic writers that I fear we must give them a general absolution. The few additional blunders I have thought proper to correct are indicated by the foot-notes.

In conclusion, I have to thank Dr Eberhard Nestle, of Ulm, for kindly revising my translation of Mr Harris's Syriac transcription; Mr J. F. Stenning, of Oxford, for taking some photographs of the *Anaphora Pilati* for me during his visit to Sinai in 1894; and my sister, Mrs S. S. Lewis, for reading over the Arabic proofs.

## ANAPHORA PILATI.

### TRANSLATION OF THE SYRIAC.

<sup>1</sup>The report of the notification concerning our Lord Jesus the Christ, which was sent by Pilate, governor of Palestine, to Tiberius Cæsar, the Emperor of Rome, in the city of Rome.

For in those days after the crucifixion of our Lord Jesus the Christ by command of Pontius Pilate, to whom was committed the dominion of Palestine and Phenicia, these things took place and happened in Jerusalem. Memoirs of [the things] that were done to our Lord Jesus the Christ by the hands of the Jews, by means of a writing of Pilate himself.<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>He sent it to Tiberius Cæsarius to the city of Rome thus:

To the Worshipful, to the Ruler of the universe, Tiberius the victorious Emperor; Pontius Pilate, governor of the region of the East, of the cities of Phenicia. Being in great fear and in much trembling, I make known to thy majesty, O

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Arabic.*] om. The . . . himself.

<sup>2</sup> [*Arabic.*] B. In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, one God. A. This is the memorial of what was done to our Lord Jesus the Christ by command of Pilate the Pontius, ruler of the Jews, in the eighteenth year of the reign of Tiberius the Cæsar Emperor of Rome, in the nineteenth year from the beginning of the reign of Herod son of Herod king of the Jews, when the twenty-fifth day of Adar had passed; in the government of Rufus (B. and Rubilius), and

Emperor, that at that time a short while ago, I make known, that in that city of priests, the most honoured of all cities, Jerusalem, all the people of the Jews delivered to me a certain righteous man who was called Jesus, bringing against him many accusations which were calumnious, but they were  
 page 2 not able to convict him of anything, for they only shewed one heresy in truth against him; that Jesus had said to them that the Sabbath is nothing, neither the keeping of it. But he made many cures on this day of the Sabbath, by means of good works; for he opened the eyes of the blind and caused them to see; and the lame to walk, and he raised the dead. And he cured the paralysed, and gave them health, [those] who could not move their bodies, or stretch one of their muscles, and there was nothing at all that could be moved, except only the voice: and to these he gave strength that they should walk and run. And he commanded the sick, and they were healed. And the last thing that was greater than all, which is thought wonderful even for the gods: a dead man who had been four days in Sheol, he commanded by a word only, and he arose, he who was in the village of Bethany, and his body was stinking with foam and all his body was eaten by the earthworm.

---

in the fourth year of their rule, by command of IUSIUS son of K̄IA-FARIUS, priests of the Jews, and all that happened after the cross and sufferings of the Lord, and the doings of the (B. two) chief priests and others of the Jews. And all that Nicodemus saw he wrote in the Hebrew tongue.

In these days Jesus was crucified by command of Pilate (B. the Pontius), in his dominion over Palestine and the coast, and this is the memorial which was made in Jerusalem by the Jews concerning the Christ, and which was sent up to Tiberius the Cæsar in Romē.

Him he raised, and commanded him to run, there being no appearance of a dead man about him at all, but like a bridegroom who goes out of the bride-chamber, thus he was perfect in all his appearance.

And to other people who were vexed by demons, and were chased from [their] dwelling, and had lived in the deserts and ate their [own] flesh, he caused all these to sit down in their houses like wise [people], and he drove the demons out of them, and drowned them in the sea by means of the swine.

And again the man whose hand was withered, and all his side, he cured by a word alone, and he arose quite whole without hurt.

And again the woman whose blood had run for eighteen years<sup>1</sup>, when she touched his garment, was cured.

And also the damsel, the daughter of one of the chiefs of the Jews themselves, he raised from death as from a sleep. And again in the city of Nain, whilst they were going to bury a dead man, the son of a widow, and he saw that her grief was bitter and sore, he called him, and raised him, and made him turn with joy to his buriers.

But those chief priests accused him that he worked on the Sabbath day and cured all afflictions. But I think that this Jesus did also other miracles which were much greater

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Arabic.*] and her muscles and her joints were loosened by the flow of blood till she did not bear a human form, but resembled the dead who have no voice; and not one of the physicians who were in the towns could cure her, for there was no hope of life left in her; and [as] Jesus [was] passing, she received strength, and in the midst of the crowd laid hold of the hem of his garment, and from that hour she was strengthened and cured and went running to her town, Baniyas, from Capernaum. And that was not near it, a journey of six days.

And also another man born blind from his mother's womb, who had no eyes at all. He spat on the ground, and made clay and anointed the place of his eyes, and created eyes for him with which he might see, and sent him to the water of Siloam to wash.

(The stories of Jairus's daughter and of the widow's son are omitted.)

than these, that would be great and wonderful even from the gods whom we worship.

But this [man] Herod and Archelaus and Philip and Hannan and Caipha, those [men] delivered to me, with the multitude of the Jews. And they<sup>1</sup> raised a great sedition against me <sup>2</sup>on account of this [man] in a crowd that I should crucify him<sup>3</sup>. And I strove much to release him, and I could not. And when I saw  
 page 3 the tumult that rose against me because of him, I gave sentence against him that he should be crucified, having scourged him beforehand with whips, not having found against this man one reason which condemned him to death among all the accusations that they brought against him. And when this Jesus was crucified on the wood, a great darkness took hold of all created things in the middle of the day ; because the sun was darkened<sup>4</sup>, and the light of the moon appeared like unto blood, <sup>5</sup>and many people of the Jews were swallowed up by the earth ; and there were great thunderings and lightnings ; and many graves were opened, and many dead people rose from their graves. And the twelve patriarchs with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, those who had gone out of the world, about two thousand years ago<sup>6</sup>, I saw them with my eyes in the body as they appeared also to all men. And they mourned and wept bitterly because of the great iniquity which took place, and because of the destruction of the Jews, and of their Law, for

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Arabic.*] The people.

<sup>2</sup> *om.* on...him.

<sup>3</sup> at mid-day, and the stars did not shew their rays, and the moon was uncovered, and her light &c.

<sup>4</sup> and thus the veil of the temple of the Jews was torn, and with the force of the earthquake the rocks were rent, and in that terror

they could not even repose, on account of the earthquake that there was from six o'clock on Friday until the time that the Sabbath-day dawned. And at the time when the first day of the week dawned, there was a loud voice from Heaven, and a light shone seven times greater than [that of] every day. And at the time of the third hour of the night of the first day of the week there appeared a sun shining with its rays more than every day, and like lightning that flashes suddenly on a winter day, thus were seen men who were great and tall in stature, clothed in garments of glory and of wonder, who were very many and innumerable. And thus their voice went when they cried, as the voice of a great thunder, for they cried thus: 'He who was crucified upon the wood of the cross, Jesus the Nazarene, who is God, has come again to life, and has risen from the grave.'<sup>5</sup> 'Arise, come, ye who were imprisoned in the lowest depths of Sheol.'<sup>6</sup> Then the earth was cleft from above to the great abyss; nothing being seen of its foundations, 'save only the waters of the abyss, those that are below the earth. And there was seen a crowd of people who had come to life and rose from among the dead. And thus they cried with those who cried from the height of heaven, The Saviour and the

---

the dead appeared and stood, as even the Jews testify that they saw Abraham and Isaac and Jacob the fathers, and Moses and Job who died, as these say, two thousand and five hundred years ago.

<sup>5</sup> [*Arabic.*] The God who was crucified is risen; he went up and gave his commands to Gehenna.

<sup>6</sup> O ye who were enslaved in the lower parts of the earth.

<sup>7</sup> and thus appeared the waters of the abyss, with the cry of those who were in Heaven, and the dead who rose and walked were very many; and he robbed Gehenna of its dead, and appeared to the women and said to them, Say to my disciples, that they go before me into Galilee, for there they shall see me.



Raiser of the dead said to his disciples, Behold he goeth before them into Galilee, there they shall go and see him<sup>7</sup>.  
 page 4 And during all that night, the light never ceased to shine. And many of the Jews died and were swallowed up in the midst of the earth<sup>1</sup>, <sup>2</sup>these who had stood up against Jesus. But I saw also a vision of dead [men], of those who had come to life and had risen, those whom I had never seen [before]. But these Jews, who remained and were concealed, went and saw<sup>3</sup>. I, however, was in great fear and trembling. I wrote the things that I saw which were done. And I sent these things to thy Majesty, O Emperor, having already put in these writings everything that was done by the Jews. And here I have sent it to the Majesty of thy Royalty. <sup>4</sup>O Lord, I salute thee.<sup>5</sup>

## PARADOSIS PILATI.

And when these letters were written and sent up to Rome the city of the empire, and Tiberius Cæsar knew them; and they were brought up and read before him; all they who were gathered before him there were seized with a great wonder<sup>4</sup> about this, because of the great iniquity and wickedness that had been

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Arabic.*] so that many were not found in the morning of those who did as they did to Jesus. And all the synagogues of the Jews who were in Jerusalem fled, and not one appeared.

<sup>2</sup> om. these...saw.

<sup>3</sup> om. O...thee.

<sup>4</sup> when they heard that through the sin of Pilate the earthquake and the darkness had come upon the whole world. om. about...Pilate.

done by Pilate. Then Tiberius Cæsar was filled with a great anger, and <sup>a</sup>his rage mounted up against Pilate like smoke from a furnace. And in the rage of his anger<sup>b</sup> he sent Romans<sup>c</sup> to bring him from Jerusalem to Rome in great disgrace, like a man who is a malefactor. Then the Romans came down according to the commandment of Cæsar; and they took Pilate and bound him with fetters of iron, and thus they took him up to Rome beside Cæsar. Then the Emperor Tiberius having heard that Pilate had come up to Rome, <sup>d</sup>commanded that a tribune should be prepared for him, in one of the temples of the heathen gods. When all his own council were assembled with him, and all those who held positions of power, and all the forces of his dominion were gathered, he went up and<sup>e</sup> sat in the temple on the tribune. Then he commanded that they should make Pilate stand before the judgment-seat. And when Pilate went up and stood before him, Tiberius answered and said to him, What are these things that thou hast done in thy wickedness? Wonderful things like these had been told to thee, and thou hast dared wickedly to crucify that man, and thou hast clothed the whole world with darkness by thine iniquity. Then Pilate answered and said to him, O Emperor, I am blameless in this. They who are guilty of this crime are the multitude<sup>f</sup> of the Jews. And Cæsarius answered

---

<sup>a</sup> *om.* his...anger.

<sup>b</sup> *i.e.* Roman soldiers.

<sup>c</sup> *om.* commanded...and.

<sup>d</sup> religion.

4 Trembling took hold of them. Thus  
 one, went up to his house, wondering  
 what had happened.

Caesar had commanded that Pilate should be  
 carefully guarded, <sup>5</sup>when this was known in  
 Rome. <sup>6</sup>And the next day he had a judgment-  
 seat of the Empire.<sup>6</sup> And he went up and sat  
 in his Senate. And he commanded that Pilate  
 come before him. And when Pilate came up and  
 stood before the judgment-seat, Cæsar began again to ask  
 him, and thus he spake to him, Tell me truly, O  
 villain, for on account of the iniquity and wicked-  
 ness which thou hast done, <sup>7</sup>and hast stretched forth [thy]  
 hands upon the Son,<sup>7</sup> even now thy wicked and daring works  
 are seen, O villain! Thus it happened to all the gods, and  
 they fell <sup>8</sup>from their places and were broken and ground like  
 powder, and perished from the earth<sup>8</sup>. Tell me truly, who  
 was that man that was crucified? for lo! his name alone has  
 destroyed all those gods. And Pilate answered and said to him,  
<sup>9</sup>His own memorials in truth certify that he is the Son of God.<sup>9</sup>  
 Even I have been convinced by his works that he is very much

<sup>5</sup> [*Arabic.*] till he should know the affair of Jesus by examination.

<sup>6</sup> *om.* And...Empire.

<sup>7</sup> *om.* and...Son.

<sup>8</sup> *om.* from...earth.

<sup>9</sup> The report which I sent to thee about it is true.

greater than those gods whom we worship. And Cæsar answered and said to him, And why therefore didst thou do to him such deeds as thou didst write to me, 'when thou didst not know that any wicked thing had been done by him against our kingdom'? And Pilate answered and said to him, On account of the impiety and quarrelsomeness which they raised unjustly against me, they who are Jews, I did this to him.

page 6 Then Tiberius Cæsar was filled with a great anger, 'and his wrath rose like the smoke from a furnace'. And he took counsel quickly with all his officers. Then he commanded that an edict should be written against the Jews thus, To Lucianus chief and commander of the district of the East, governor of the whole province, greeting. 'Because a certain unlawful thing was done to-day, in the daring deed that was done by certain inhabitants of Jerusalem and of the towns that are round about it, who are Jews, transgressors of the law, 'they who did a wicked and atrocious deed to a certain god who was called the Son, by means of Pilate, by the compulsion that they raised against him, and they assembled and rose in insurrection and in great contention and crucified him', and as if owing to these wicked deeds which they did, all created things nearly perished by the darkness that was over all the earth. 'For the earth shook and the graves were opened, and the rocks were rent, and the sun did not appear, and the whole world

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Arabic.*] when thou wast not ignorant of it, if thou didst not wish evil against my kingdom.

<sup>2</sup> *om.* and...furnace.

<sup>3</sup> *add* I fear.

<sup>4</sup> that they condemned and crucified a god who was called Jesus.

<sup>5</sup> *om.* For...destruction.

was nearly left to destruction.<sup>6</sup> But 'thou, immediately on receiving this commandment which is sent to thee from us<sup>6</sup>, seek and gather to thee all the Roman troops, and take them and go to Jerusalem, and make there a great captivity, as by our own command, having scattered and dispersed them amongst all nations for bondservice, <sup>7</sup>all those who are of the nation of the Jews. Remove and scatter their tribe, having taught fear to all the tribes that they do not venture nor do a deed like this in the ire and anger of their rage<sup>7</sup>.

When this command went down and arrived in the eastern province, <sup>8</sup>and was given into the hands of Lucianus governor of all the region of the East, he was in great fear by reason of this command. But he left the Jews in their former religion as they were. And those Jews who were left in foreign lands he subjugated them to the nations. And this holds good and has continued to this day<sup>8</sup>. And when these things were done by Lucianus, and were made known to the Emperor Tiberius, they were pleasing to him. Again, Tiberius commanded with respect to Pilate that he should come before him, and he put questions concerning him<sup>9</sup>, and he commanded one of the executioners to take off Pilate's head<sup>10</sup>. Then that blessed

<sup>6</sup> *om.* thou . . . us.

<sup>7</sup> and banish them from Jerusalem.

<sup>8</sup> Lucianus both heard and obeyed the command of Cæsar to the letter; and he made captive all the nation of the Jews, and those who remained among the nations, he commanded that they should be subjugated unto this day.

<sup>9</sup> Jesus.

<sup>10</sup> *add.* because he had stretched it out against Jesus the God.

one, when he went and arrived 'at the place where he was about to be crowned by his Lord, entreated the executioner, saying, I entreat thee, my brother, for the love of our Lord Jesus the Christ, that thou have patience with me a little that I may pray and supplicate to him on account of whom I bear this sentence of death by means of this sharp sword. And when Pilate had said these things, he turned towards the east, page 7 and knelt before his Lord<sup>1</sup>, and began to entreat his Lord Jesus the Christ, I beg of Thee, Almighty God, our Lord Jesus the Christ, who came for our salvation; receive, Lord, the prayer of Thy servant at this time, and absolve, Lord, and forgive me all [in which] I have failed and sinned before Thee. I knew not what I did. And, Lord, reckon not it as sin to me, nor destroy<sup>1</sup> me with the mad people of the Jews, because I did not wish to soil my hands with Thy holy blood. <sup>2</sup>And just because of this very thing I took water and washed my hands, and I said that I am pure from the blood of that just man.<sup>3</sup> And when I had done this, then the cursed people of the Jews rose against me in insurrection. <sup>4</sup>And Thou, Lord, knowest that from fear of Cæsar I delivered Thee into their hands.<sup>5</sup> And Thou, my Lord and my God, knewest that I did this not knowing what I did. Lord, do not count this sin to me and destroy me, <sup>6</sup>but remember

---

[*Arabic.*] <sup>1</sup> at the place of execution, he prayed silently and said, Lord, do not destroy, etc.

<sup>2</sup> *om.* And . . . man.

<sup>3</sup> *om.* And . . . hands.

<sup>4</sup> and be not angry with

me and<sup>4</sup> Thy servant Procla, her who stands with me in the conflict at this time, and in this bitter hour of death, <sup>5</sup>her who saw in prophecy when Thou camest to be crucified; remember not this sin to me, Lord, nor require it at my hands<sup>6</sup>, but absolve and forgive us our debts and our sins, and make us stand on the side of the righteous, and may we be counted with them in Thy kingdom. And when Pilate had finished his prayer, behold, a voice came to him from Heaven, saying, Men upon earth shall call thee blessed, and all the tribes of the people, because that in thy days and by thy hands was completed and perfected all that is written in the prophets concerning me. And thou therefore shalt be a witness to me in that second coming of mine, when I shall come to judge the twelve tribes of Israel, and them who do not confess me and believe in my holy name. <sup>6</sup>And when this voice came to him and spake with him, he gave thanks, and knelt on the earth, and said to the executioner, Come near now and finish what thou art commanded by Cæsar.<sup>6</sup> And when the executioner came near and struck with the sword, and took off Pilate's head, then an angel of God came down from Heaven, and he received Pilate's head. <sup>7</sup>Now Procla his wife was standing and looking at him.<sup>7</sup> And when she<sup>8</sup> saw the angel of God who received the head of her husband, then she was filled with great joy; and in the joy of her heart she

---

[*Arabic.*] <sup>5</sup> her whom Thou didst teach to prophesy when it was Thy will to be crucified, and do not condemn me and her for my sin.

<sup>6</sup> *om.* And . . . Cæsar.

<sup>7</sup> *om.* Now . . . him.

<sup>8</sup> Procla his wife.

gave up her soul to her Lord, and she was buried with her husband. 'And they finished their conflict with a good testimony. And they were thought worthy of the Paradise of God. And they mediate on behalf of sinners that they may repent and live. May their prayers be a wall to us!' 'Amen, and Amen.

---

[*Chorus*] 'Am. And . . . us.

' And to our Lord Jesus the Christ be praise and glory and power from henceforth and to everlasting. Amen.



## RECOGNITIONS OF CLEMENT.

*(From a MS. in the Convent at Mount Sinai. No. 508.)*

IN the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, one God. The Christ is God, my strength, my help, and my hope. This is the tale of [how] Clement recognized his parents and his brothers by means of Peter the Apostle, chief of the Apostles, blessed in the faith; and this is the teaching of the above-mentioned Saint Peter, while he was at Tripolis.

"It is necessary that love to God should be greater than that to parents and children, for He is the cause of all; and it is difficult for us to know what God is, but we are sure that He is God. And do not think that ye are believers, when ye are without baptism, because by it the figure of grace is found in the water, recognizing those who are baptized in the name of the Blessed Trinity, who saves from future punishment; and therefore hasten to the water, for it alone is able to quench that fire. And when he said that, he dismissed the crowd." And when I Clement had completed three months with him, he commanded me to fast for three days, and then we went to fountains of water on the sea-shore, and he baptized me there and with me Maroones, the man who had entertained us. Then page 2 he appointed him bishop of Tripolis, and twelve presbyters, with deacons. Then he left the people of Tripolis, and went out to Antioch in Syria.

And the cause of my meeting him was this. While I was in the city of Rome, in my youthful years, I had carried chastity and righteousness to a great length, as also the recollection of death, and meditation about the soul, whether it is

mortal or immortal, and about this world, whether it had a beginning or not, and whether it will perish or not. And whilst I thought on these things, I did not cease frequenting the place of philosophers and wise men, and I did not find anything more from the Porch than a deceitful and vain thing, and I thought I would go to Egypt to those magicians [who foretell] about the dead, and while I thought about this, lo! news was spread about in the empire of Tiberius concerning a man in the land of Judæa who was preaching the eternal kingdom of God and who confirmed that by many mighty deeds. And when this was so, behold, Barnabas came to Rome preaching the Christ,  
page 3 and the wise men were mocking him. And meanwhile I knew in him a righteous purpose; and I adopted his evidence, and I forsook like dogs those who do not accept the word of salvation; and I took Barnabas, and I entertained him at my house, and I heard speech from him; and when they were going out to the land of Judæa, I went out with him, and in fifteen days we came to Cæsarea; and I heard that Peter was in it, and that he intended [to have] a contest with Simon the next day; and when I went to his dwelling, Barnabas brought me in to him. And Peter received me with much affection, and he was very glad of what I had done to benefit Barnabas in Rome, and he confirmed my vocation, and commanded me to come to him, as he intended to travel to Rome; and when I promised him this, I asked him about the soul and about the world, and he made clear to me briefly by examination the folly that enters into people by means of sin, and that is what overclouds the minds of people like smoke.  
page 4 And he explained to me the coming of the Christ, and the resurrection to life. And in the morning, behold, Zacchæus came saying that Simon had postponed the contest for seven days. Peter completed his teaching of us about the science of the world, according to what the Holy Spirit gave him. And after this we went to Tripolis, to the place in which I was baptized, and from thence Peter sent Niceta and Aquila with others to Laodicea, and told them to wait for him at the door of the city.

But I and he went to Antaradus, and I thanked him for taking me with him as his follower, and he said to me, 'If I send thee to a place to buy for us what is necessary, wilt thou die?' And I answered and said to him, 'Thou art to me instead of my father and my mother, and my brothers; thou hast been the cause of my knowing the truth; and thou hast made me equal to great people. Wilt thou therefore put me in the place of service?' And Peter answered joking and said to me, 'Dost thou think that thou hast never been a servant? And who will watch over my undressing and dressing? and who will prepare for me the many dishes that are necessary to the cooks, and this in the greatness of skill which is designed for luxurious people for the gratification of desire which is a great satisfaction, and I am clothed by it with abundance; and do not imagine that thou shalt know anything of this if thou art with me, for I do not get anything but the smallest bit of bread, and some oil with a little pulse; and all my wardrobe is these rags which thou lookest upon, and I need nothing else, for my mind looks on the good things that are eternal, and does not turn to what is contemptible. And I am surprised at thee, for thou art a man brought up in the enjoyment of the world, and thou hast despised all this, and thou art contented with things in moderation. But I and my brother Andrew were brought up in orphanage and poverty and misery, and we were accustomed to toil and that we should bear fatigue. For this reason I will endure from thee toil and service to thyself.' And when I heard this from him I shuddered at it, and took an example on hearing this from a man whom the world cannot equal, and my eye wept. And when he saw me crying, he said to me, 'Why are thine eyes weeping?' And I answered him, saying, 'In what have I sinned against thee, that thou causest me to hear this speech?' page 5

And Peter said, 'If I did wrong in saying I would serve thee, thou didst a greater wrong at the first when thou didst not see that, and there is no equality in this, yet it is fitting that I should do this to thee.' page 6

'But thou, O Apostle from God, Saviour of our souls, it is

not fitting that thou shouldst do this.' And Peter answered and said, 'Behold, I would have accepted thy opinion, if it were not that our Lord, who came for the salvation of the world, to whom alone be honour, bore service, that He might persuade us not to be ashamed to serve our brethren. And He washed my feet and hands, saying, Thus do to thy brethren.' And I Clement said to him, 'I thought I should conquer thee in speech, and I was a fool, but I thank God who has put thee in the place  
page 8 of parents.' And Peter said to me 'Hast thou any kinsfolk?' And I said to him, 'There are noble men in my family nearly related to Cæsar the Emperor. And he, the husband of my mother, possesses dignity, and by her we are three boys, twins before me, as my father told me, and I do not even know them, nor my mother, except by a faint recollection; and after them my mother gave birth to me, and her name was Matthidia, and my father's name was Faustinian and my brothers', Faustus and Faustinianus. And when I was in my fifth year, my mother saw a vision in her sleep, as my father related to me afterwards, that if the woman did not take her children immediately and go out of Rome and travel for ten years, she would perish, both  
page 9 she and they. But my father, when he heard this, carried them into a ship, with provisions, secretly, with many servants, and sent them to travel to Athens, and he kept me only with him in order to console me, being overwhelmed with grief thereat. And when a year had passed after that, my father sent to Athens goods and money, in order that he might know their state; and the messengers went, and did not return. And in the third year he sent others for that [purpose], and they departed, and came in the fourth year to tell that they had not found the lads, nor their mother, and that these had never got to Athens at all; and they did not find a trace of them. And when my father  
page 10 heard this, he sorrowed with a great sorrow, and he was in much perplexity, but he neither knew how to find [them] nor where to weep for them. And he went to the shore of the sea, and I with him, and he began to ask the sailors from every place where ships had been wrecked for four years past, if any of them had seen a

drowned woman with her boys; and he did not fall in with the certainty of the matter, for no one can explore the expanse of the ocean. Thereupon he made me his heir in Rome, and appointed guardians over me; and I that day was twelve years old, and he went from Rome in a ship, and departed to places to look for them. And now I have not heard news of him, nor [seen] writing, and I do not know if he is alive or dead, whilst I think that he must have died, and now to-day it is twenty years since he separated from me.' And when Peter heard this, his eyes wept from pity, and he said to those believers that were with him, 'One gains experience by what this man's father hath suffered. It shews concerning believers who are not vain heathen, who suffer here without reward in the last day, that those of the believers who are tried here endure suffering for the forsaking of their sins by means of it.' And when Peter said this, one of those present answered before all, and besought Peter, saying, 'Behold, to-morrow our journey will be to the island of Aradus in the sea that thou mayest see it. And there are there great pillars of vine-wood, and the sight of them is wonderful.' And Peter allowed us to go, and said to us, 'When ye arrive, do not go all of you together to the wonderful place, that no misfortune befall you.' And we went, and came to the island, and we got down out of the ship where the pillars were, and every one of us began to turn to some of the marvels that were there. But whilst Peter went to the pillars, behold, a woman sitting outside the gates asking alms. And when Peter saw her, he said to her, 'O woman, what is defective in thy limbs, that thou hast submitted to this humiliation of begging, and thou dost not increase what God has given thee by the work of thy hands, so that thou couldst even give bread to me from day to day?' And the woman sighed, and said, 'O would that I had hands able for service and work, but they are in the form of hands, yet they are dead, even when I bite them with my teeth.' And Peter answered and said, 'And what is the cause that obliges thee to do this?' And the woman said, 'The cause of it is only weakness; if I had boldness or strength, I would

page 11

page 12

page 13

have thrown away my life from a mountain, or in the deep, and I would have had rest from the sorrows and the cares with which my people reproach me.' Said Peter, 'And are those who kill themselves saved from punishment, or do they suffer more of it in Gehenna with the souls who did thus to kill them?' And the woman said, 'O would I were sure that in Gehenna there are living souls, that I might go there and see my loved ones, even  
 page 14 if I were in torment.' And Peter said, 'And what is it that grieves thee, O woman, tell me; and if I knew perhaps I could cure thee, and convince thee that in Gehenna there are living souls, and give thee skill that thou shouldst not long (to go) with them to drowning, or to anything else, and that thou mayest go out of the body without torment.' And she was glad at the promise, and she began to relate to him, saying, "I am a woman who was possessed of dignity, and a nobleman wedded me, a man of position, related to Cæsar the Emperor. And I had twin sons by him, and I had another son besides them, and after that the brother of my husband fell in love with me, and I persuaded him to live in chastity, and I did not tell my husband of his wicked desire<sup>1</sup> towards me. And I resolved that I would not consent to him, nor defile the couch of my husband, besides exciting enmity between them, and that would be a reproach to  
 page 15 me before all my people, and I resolved on going out of the city with my son for a short time till this bad wind should cease and vengeance should pass from me, and I left my other son with his father that he might be comforted by him, and I dreamt in a dream as if I saw a vision in the night saying to me, 'O woman, go out with thy children from here until a time that I will shew thee thy return, and if not, thou shalt perish with thy husband and children.' And therefore I did [it], and when I told this to my husband he shuddered at that, then he rose, and carried me into a ship with my boys, and many servants, and much goods, and sent us to Athens, and while we travelled on the sea, the winds arose against us, and the waves came over us, and we were engulfed in the night, and every one who was

<sup>1</sup> lit. desire of wickedness.

with us was drowned and I, miserable being, was thrown with a wave to the side of a rock, and I was inveigled by it (into) a hope of finding my boys alive. On that account, I did not throw myself to the depths and go to rest, and this, by my life, would have been easy then, when I was overwhelmed with grief. And when the dawn approached I began to turn and grope for my drowned sons, and I mourn and bewail them with tears, whilst I did not see one of them nor their drowned bodies; and when the people of the place saw me, they pitied me and covered me. Then they sought for my boys in the depths, and did not find them. And there came to me women comforting me, and they were reminded of the misfortunes and the griefs they had suffered like to what had befallen me, and that was a thing that increases my grief because there were no other misfortunes but [such as] mine with which they consoled me. And they invited me to go to them (two) and I went to a poor woman when she invited me to go to her, and she said to me, 'I had a husband, who died by drowning in the sea, and left me that day, being of my own age, and since then I have known no man, though many invited me to wedlock, and I preferred chastity and piety towards my husband. Come, we will go into one life and one household,' and I lived with her that she might keep her affection for her husband. And after that I had a pain in my hand, and the woman my house-companion had a paralytic stroke there in the house, and since then for some time I sit here begging alms for myself and for my friend. And now I have explained to thee my affair and my story, and fulfil now thy promise to me, that thou mayest give me the cure, by means of which it will be possible for me to hasten from this world with my friend." And when the woman said this, Peter fell the more into thought, and he was then standing, and I Clement came up to Peter, and said to him, 'O good Teacher, where hast thou been, for I have been seeking thee for some time. What dost thou command us to do?' And he said, 'Go forward and wait for me in the ship.' And I did as he commanded me. And he renewed the questioning of the woman, and said to her, 'Tell me about thy

page 16

page 17

page 18

family, and thy city, and thy children, and their names, and I will give thee the medicine.' And the woman did not wish to tell him about that, and she began to tell him untruthfully, that she might get the medicine. And she said to him, 'I am a woman of Ephesus, and my husband was from Sicily,' and she changed the names of her boys; and Peter saw that she was trustworthy, and said to her, 'I had been thinking, that thou wouldst have had a good fortune of joy this day, because I thought that thou wert a woman whose affairs I know.' And the woman adjured him, saying, 'I ask you to tell me what thou knowest, for I do not think that among women there is one more wretched than I.' And Peter began to relate to her truly, and said, 'There is with me a lad my follower, in search of the certain knowledge of  
page 19 God, and he is from Rome; besides, he told me about a father whom he had, and twin brothers, and he believed that his mother, as his father had told him, saw in a vision that she should go out of Rome with her sons that she might not perish with her husband, and she went out, and he does not know what became of her, and that his father went in search of her, and news of him failed also, and he does not know what became of him.' And when Peter said this, the woman fell in a faint, and Peter came forward, and took her hand, and said to her, 'Have confidence, and trust me, and tell me truly what thou hast to do with that.' As she recovered from the faint, and wiped her face, she said, 'Where is this lad whom thou didst tell me of?' And Peter said, 'Tell thou me first thy affair, and I will shew thee him.' And she said, 'I am the mother of this boy.' Said Peter, 'What is his name?' She said,  
page 20 'Clement is his name.' And Peter said, 'He is the youth who is present, and I commanded him to wait for me in the ship.' And she fell down and did homage to him. And she said, 'Hasten first to the ship, that thou mayest show me my only son, for when I see him, I have seen my boys who were drowned here.' And Peter said to her, 'I will do this to thee, but when thou seest him, be silent until thou comest down from the island.' And the woman said, 'I will do so.' And Peter took her by



the hand, and brought her near to the ship. And when I saw him holding a woman by the hand, I smiled, then I honoured him for that, and I began to lead the woman, and when I caught her hand, she cried with a loud voice, weeping and embracing me, and she began to kiss me. And I, because I did not know the thing, thought she was insane, or bewitched, and I pushed her from me. And Peter said, 'Why, my son, dost thou push thy mother from thee?' And when I heard this from him, that she was my mother, my heart was troubled, and my eyes wept, and I threw myself towards her and my heart warmed to her, and weeping overcame me for joy and pity, and I kissed her; and all the people who were there came near us, hurrying to see the beggar woman, how she had recognised her son. And when we wished to go out from the island, my mother said to me, 'O my beloved son, it is my duty to say good-bye to the woman who received me, and besides, she is a paralysed woman, bed-ridden in the house.' And when Peter heard [this], he marvelled at the sense of the woman, and he commanded that the paralysed woman should be carried on a couch, and they brought her to him. And when they came near, Peter said, the people listening, 'If I am an apostle of Christ, let these people now believe, that God is the only one, Creator of all, and the restoration of this woman is complete.' And when Peter said this, the woman rose whole, and did obeisance to Peter, and asked him about these things. And he convinced her, and she knew the certainty of the thing; and when all the people heard they wondered with a great wonder, and Peter made them a speech about religion and about the last day. He said, 'Whosoever wishes to hear the certainty about God for the salvation of his soul, let him travel to Antioch, as I have resolved to stay there for three months; and more obligatory than absence for the merchandise of the gains of the world [is] the search for the salvation of souls, and the gain of the other [world].' And after the speech of Peter to the people, I gave a thousand drachmas to the woman whom Peter had cured, and entrusted them to an honest man, and recompensed the women who all had known my mother; and we travelled to Antaradus with Peter, and my

mother and the rest; and when we arrived at the house, my mother asked me, saying, 'How is thy father, O my son?' and I said to her, 'From the time when he went out in search of thee no trace was known of him'; and when she heard that she sighed and grieved. And after a day we went out to Laodicea, and when we came near to it, behold, before the gates disciples of Peter, Niceta and Aquila, and they met us and took us to the house; and when Peter saw the place suitable, he was pleased to stay there ten days, and Niceta and Aquila asked me, saying, 'Who is this woman?' and I said to them, 'This is my mother, whom God permitted me to know by the forethought of my lord Peter'; and when I said this, Peter explained to them the certainty of the thing, how it was, according as I had related it about my mother, according as he heard from her, and he it was who had led us to a knowledge of each other. And when Peter said this, they marvelled much when they heard Peter about the woman and her recollection of her sons Faustus and Faustinianus, and they were astonished at the tale. And they said, 'Do we see? is this a vision or the truth? if we are not bewitched it is true.' And they beat upon their faces, and they said, 'We are Faustus and Faustinianus, and our hearts were straitened when thou didst begin the tale, and we held firm till we should hear the end of the tale, because many of the things are like one another. And this by my life is our mother, and this is our brother.' And when they said this, they embraced me with much weeping, and they kissed me, and they went in to our mother, and found her asleep. And Peter said to them, 'Do not wake her, lest an emotion of joy overcome her suddenly, and her soul grow small within her.' And when our mother awoke, Peter began to say to her, 'I will instruct thee, O woman, about our religion, and our faith in God; we believe in one God, Creator of all this visible world, and we keep His commands, and sanctify and honour [our] parents; and we live a pure life, and have no communion with the heathen in meat or in drink, unless they are baptized in the name of the Father, and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost. And if there is a father or mother or wife or son or brother unbaptized, we

do not trust him, and do not be grieved if thy son is bound by this unless thou becomest like him.' And when she heard this, she said, 'And what is necessary, that I should not be baptized to-day, and that I should not come to this, because my soul has hated false gods, because they inspire the reverse of chastity, on account of which I fled from Rome with my sons Faustus and Faustinian?' And when our mother said this, my brothers Niceta and Aquila did not wait, but they [were] overjoyed and they embraced her and kissed her. And the woman said, page 26  
'What is this thing?' Said Peter, 'O woman, keep thy presence of mind. These are thy sons Faustus and Faustinianus, whom thou didst think were drowned in the sea, how are they here before thee?' 'The sea swallowed them in the middle of the night, and how is the one called Niceta, and the other Aquila?' 'Let them tell us now that we and thou may know.' And when Peter said this, the woman fell in a faint from joy, and we restored her with great labour, and when she sat up, she said to us, 'I beg of you, my beloved sons, tell me what happened to you in that night.' And my brother Niceta said, 'I relate to thee, O my mother, that in that night when our ship was wrecked they carried us into the boat, to make merchandise of page 27  
us, and they rowed with us to the land, and came with us to Cæsarea, and they tormented us there with hunger, and beating, in order that we should not say anything that did not suit them. And they changed our names, and sold us to a Jewess, whose name was Justa, and she bought us and educated us, and when we came to years of discretion, we acquired a sure faith in God, and we began disputing and conversing that the godlessness of all the heathen might be reprovèd; and we learnt the sayings of philosophy, that by this we might examine vain philosophies and reasonings. And we associated with a man, a wizard, whose name was Simon, and we had much affection for him, and he nearly led us astray. And it came to us that there was a prophet in the land of Judæa, and everyone who believed in him would live without sorrow or death, and we thought it was Simon; and after that we met a disciple of our master Peter, whose name was Zacchæus, and he exhorted us much and

page 28 hurried us from the wizard, and conducted us to Peter, and he led us to the knowledge of the truth. And we seek from God that he would count thee worthy to welcome thee to the grace to which we have come, that we may be filled with grace towards one another. This is the reason why thou didst think that we were drowned that night, and we also thought that thou hadst perished in the sea.' And when Niceta said this, our mother ran to Peter and said, 'I ask and beg of thee that thou wouldst baptize me, that I may not be deprived one day of intercourse with my children.' And we begged this of him ; and he commanded her to fast for three days, then after that he baptized her in the sea, in presence of her children, and we took food with her, and we rejoiced at this in the glory of God and

page 29 the teaching of Peter, and in the knowledge we had got of our mother ; and we learnt that chastity is the cause of salvation to the nations ; and after that day Peter took us to the harbour, and we washed there, and prayed. And behold, an old man sitting there looking towards us, and observing our prayer closely, and after we had prayed, he approached us to reprove us and to say that everything happens by fortune, and that invocation and prayer are useless ; and we remained three days to persuade him to change his opinion of this thing. And thereupon, during our discourse to him, we were calling him 'O Father' ; and he was calling us, 'O my sons.' And this was a providence from God, because by it we began to know this word ; and Aquila said to me and to Niceta, 'Why do you call this stranger 'Father'?' And my brother said to me, 'Do not complain of this,' and we continued in our talk to him, and he in that opinion of his, and he said 'Although the discourse has convinced me, yet I think of my wife, whose star and whose

page 30 fortune was in vice, and she fled from wickedness on account of the disgrace, and she was drowned in the sea.' And I Clement said to him, 'And how dost thou know that the woman when she fled did not marry one of the slaves, and that she died?' 'I know certainly, that she did not marry, because she was chaste, and after her death, my brother related to me how she loved him at first and he in fidelity towards me and his continence

in his chastity, did not wish to defile my bed. And she, poor creature, in her fear of me and of disgrace, used an artifice, and she is not to be blamed, for this was fated against her, and she feigned that she had seen a vision and she said to me that 'if I remain here, I shall perish with my sons.' And when I heard that from her, verily, through my desire for her safety and [that of] her sons, I sent her, and I kept with me a third son whom I had, as she asserted that she saw in her dreams.' And when I heard page 31 this from him, I said, 'Perhaps this is my father,' and my eye wept. And when my brothers sprung forward, wishing to embrace him, Peter prevented them, and said to them, 'Be silent till it pleases me.' And Peter answered and said to the old man, 'What is the name of thy son, the youngest boy?' And the old man said, 'His name is Clement.' And Peter answered him and said, 'If I shew thee to-day thy chaste wife with her three sons, wilt thou believe that a chaste mind is able to conquer animal emotions, and that my discourse which I made to thee about God is the truth?' And the old man said, 'Just as what thou hast promised me cannot be, so there cannot be (anything) without fate.' Said Peter, 'I call those present to witness that this day I present to thee thy wife with her three sons alive in her chastity. And the proof of this is my knowing the certainty of the thing better than thee. And I tell page 32 thee all that she related, in order that thou mayest know and all these may know all this.' And when Peter said this, he began to relate, saying, 'This man whom ye see, my brethren, in his ragged raiment, he is of the people of Rome, of a great lineage, and noble dignity, akin to Cæsar, and his name is Faustinianus; and he married a noble woman, and her name is Matthidia; and he had three sons by her, two of them twins, and the third younger than they, whose name is Clement, and this is he, and these are the others, the one Aquila, and the other Niceta, and their names at first were, one Faustus, and the other Faustinianus.' And when Peter said this, and named them by their names, the old man was bewildered, and fainted, and his sons fell upon him kissing him and weeping, supposing that he was dead. And the page 33

people were bewildered by this marvel, and Peter commanded us to lean off from the old man, and he took him by the hand, and raised him, and he related to the people all the misfortunes that had befallen him, and the reason that they happened. And when our mother learned this, she came hurrying, crying and saying, 'Where is my husband and lord Faustinianus, who has been miserable on account of me for a long time, seeking me in every city?' And while she was crying thus, the old man sprang hastily towards her with tears, and they embraced one another. And after all this Peter sent away the crowd of people, and commanded them to come the next day and hear the story. And behold, a man of the nobles came with his wife and children to ask us to go to his house, and Peter did not accept that from him.

page 34 And thereupon, behold, [there was] a daughter of the man [who had been] struck by a devil who had possessed her for twenty years, and on that account she was bound with chains, imprisoned in a house; the house was opened suddenly, and the chains were broken, and the devil came out from her; and the girl came and did obeisance to Peter, and said, 'O lord, I have come to thee to-day on account of my salvation, and do not grieve me nor my father.' And Peter asked them about the girl, and her parents were bewildered when they saw the chains fallen from her, and her request to Peter. And Peter had pity on her, and commanded us to go to his house. And on the morrow our father came to us, and did all that Peter commanded him; and we turned the discourse so that there might be certainty in the controversy, and after very much  
page 35 speech in reproof of folly, Peter commanded our father not to dwell for any time on what is not necessary to God in religion, but that he should repent, for the end of life is near not only to old men, but also to young ones. And he exhorted the old man with all the people for some days, then he baptized the old man in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, to whom be glory and praise for ever and ever, Amen.

O [thou] who readest, pray for him who wrote it.

The Lord remember thee in mercy, Amen, and all believers.

## RECOGNITIONS OF CLEMENT.

[*From a MS. in the British Museum, No. xxviii. (Add. 9965).*]

THE story of our father, glorious amongst the saints, Clement f. 188 a  
Pope of Rome, Martyr amongst the priests. This Blessed  
Clement was from the great city of Rome, his family being  
of the race of the Emperors, very learned and wise, as his  
sayings and writings bear evidence, for he was educated in all  
the wisdom of the Greeks, and he became a wonderful philo-  
sopher. His father's name was Fafestus, and his mother's name  
was Mattidian. He wrote the Canons of the Apostles and  
other things; became bishop at Rome, and was banished by the  
Emperor Domitian. But come, let us bring forward a little of  
the much which this Blessed Clement expounded from that  
which he wrote to James the Lord's Brother in the letter in  
which he related to him minutely about all his affairs, and how  
he turned from his former error to the knowledge of God.  
Let us write this briefly together with his Martyrdom; for thus  
it was written in the beginning of his letter: Know, O my lord  
James, that I was born and bred in Rome, and I preserved  
virginity from my youth, constantly remembering death; and  
for this reason I was in much sadness, thinking thus inwardly  
and saying, "Dost thou suppose that the soul of man is  
immortal? Is there another world than this present one?"  
With these and such like thoughts I studied night and day, and  
my life passed thus in indescribable perplexity, and many  
times I went to the dwellings of the philosophers, and asked  
them about these things, that I might learn the truth. Some of  
them said to me that the soul is immortal, and others of them

said the opposite of that, and some of them said also other things; and my soul was firmly determined to know the truth. I sought also from the wise men that I might know if there is in this universe torment, and Tartarus, and the Gehenna of fire, in which the wicked are punished after death, and if there is everlasting rest to the good, that I might pass my life virtuously in this present world, and not be tormented yondér for ever. I had in my heart an unappeasable longing like this. I heard that in the land of Judæa there had appeared a great Prophet, perfect in holiness, a chief of the Jews, that He was proclaiming about the kingdom of God, teaching the people their salvation, and doing marvellous miracles: for He was giving sight to the blind, restoring the lame, raising the dead, and doing great wonders like these, preaching that all those who live virtuously in this present world shall go to the kingdom of the heavens. When I heard this, I rejoiced greatly, and I hoped that I should learn what I longed for. This [man's] praise was growing and being confirmed every day, until a man came from Jerusalem to us in Rome, and stood in the midst of the market-place, and spoke thus to the crowd, "Oh men, people of Rome, know that to-day the Son of God is found in the body in Jerusalem, and He promises to all who obey Him, and keep the commandments of God, and walk virtuously despising present things, that they shall enjoy enduring things, and eternal life. They must know that the Trinity is one God. He commands all dwellers in the world that they do no wrong inwardly, and that they all repent of their sins, that they may not be cast into the fire that shall not be quenched, and remain in it altogether without intermission." When I heard this sweet announcement, I rejoiced greatly and my soul exulted. I left immediately all the cares of the world. I found a boat, I entered it, and resolved to go to Jerusalem, that I might enjoy what I was longing for, and hear the truth from His lips. When we were travelling, an adverse wind overtook us and hindered us; we arrived at Alexandria, and there I enquired about what had been announced to me. I heard from many that all that had been said about Him



concerning these miracles and others was true. At that time there was an honoured disciple there named Barnabas; he was much esteemed, being superior to all the teachers in these regions, so thereupon I went to him immediately and I found him teaching the people publicly, speaking about the miracles of Jesus the Christ, not in pride and boastfulness, but in humility and poverty. He was telling them many truths. And the philosophers were making game of him, and teaching people to ask him about what was not to the purpose; but he was teaching on behalf of the Christ, and giving them answers. Thereupon I chased them away, and snatched Barnabas from the midst, that they might not do him any hurt. I took him to my house, and I fell down before his feet, begging him that he would relate to me the things of the Christ minutely, and that he would tell me the whole of the truths. I resolved that I would go with him to Jerusalem, for in those days he had determined that he would be there at the feast of the Passover, on account of the agreement that he had made with the rest of the Apostles; but as for me, I had urgent affairs, and I could not go along with him. But I promised him that after a few days I should find him there. I did so, I went to Jerusalem, and I found him with Peter. They both rejoiced when they saw me; then I had an interview with Peter, and I asked him to solve all the doubts which I had about the soul, whether it is mortal or immortal, and the rest of the things that were in my mind about what had been related to me. The Apostle at once explained to me all the truths, answered me [with] all wisdom the rest of my questions, and cured my mind by wonderful speeches. He shewed me the secret of the Holy Trinity, of His creation of the world, and of the incarnation of Jesus the Christ, that He is the Son and the Word, that the dead shall rise in the last day, and that there shall be a reward to the righteous and to sinners. He urged me to attain to holy baptism, that I might be planted with the Lord the Christ, so that I might rise and be glorified with Him in the heavenly and eternal kingdom, that I might have no doubt about future blessedness. He said to me in the

f. 189a

- f. 189<sup>b</sup> whole of these speeches of his "It is of necessity that the soul is immortal, since God is by His nature just and of transcendent integrity, and that He repay the righteous of mankind when they rise, that every one of them may enjoy that which he deserves on account of his work; to the good [there shall be] perfect rest, and everlasting joy, and to the wicked sorrows and torments without end; and all who have denied this and have not believed in it are persuaded that God is unjust in neglecting the true worshippers, the virtuous who are patient under manifold griefs in this world and unspeakable torments and who die a bitter death, as He does not reward them with enjoyment on account of their good works; but heretics and transgressors of the law who have passed all their life in pleasure and diversions and at the end die a good death, He does not punish them in Gehenna on account of the evil of their deeds." Then he said to me afterwards that Simon Magus would inherit eternal fire. And when I heard these sayings from him, I felt assured that all that he preached to me was truth, and I begged the Saint to baptize me, and he told me that I must fast and wash for three months, that I might be cleansed from all pains, and then "thou shalt be worthy of divine baptism." Some days after that I heard that Peter would have a contest in public with Simon Magus, and I asked one of Peter's disciples, whose name was Aquila, about Simon Magus, and what manner [of man] he was. And he answered, "This Simon possesses all the work of the Devil, for he deceives the people, and performs tricks as if they were miracles, so that those present are astonished at them, for he goes into the fire and is not burnt and he appears like an eagle flying in the air, and he makes the stones bread and they eat them, and he becomes a serpent or a goat, or gold, or he is clothed in some other form, and he opens closed doors, and he melts iron, and makes it like wax, and he
- f. 190<sup>a</sup> creates utensils and house furniture, and calls on them to walk of their own accord and serve their masters. And this unrighteous [man] does other sorceries." When Aquila had told me about this, there came a man named Zacchæus, and said to Peter, "Lo,

all the crowd has assembled, Simon is sitting on the chair, armed like a warrior, and they are all expecting to hear your dispute." Thereupon Peter commanded me to withdraw, as I was unbaptized, that he and the Apostles might offer solemn prayers that the Lord might help them, that Simon might be reclaimed from ignorance, and above all in the dispute with Simon for many hours. And when Peter conquered him, he could not bear [it] but he fled ashamed to the city of Tyre, and performed his sorceries there. Peter learned this, and sent Aquila and me, that we should go to Tyre, investigate about Simon, and write him the answer. So we went and alighted at the house of the Canaanitish woman, Bernice, daughter of Justa, according as Peter had commanded us. And they two received us with joy, and honoured us, and related to us about Simon, that he was performing his sorceries there according to his wont, till the senseless thought him a God; thus we wrote and sent to Peter, and he came at once. When Simon heard of his arrival he fled to another country, and he did not wait for his public dispute. And the Apostle Peter staid there for some days, and did many miracles, that he might save the people from the error of Simon, and thus, by the help of God, the greater number of them should be restored to the knowledge of God. Then he passed from thence to the sea-side, and went to Tripolis, and appointed a bishop over Tripolis, whose name was Marouta. We then went out from thence to go to Antioch in Syria, and Peter sent Aquila and Niceta that they might first go before us, and that our travelling-companions might not be numerous, that those of the heathen who should see us might not be suspicious of us; and I rejoiced greatly when he kept me with him, and I was ready for all his service, so he said to me, "I am grateful for thy good service and thy management, but thou must know that I do not require various eatables, but only bread and oil, and sometimes herbs; and I do not possess a second dress, as thou seest, for all my mind is in the perfect goods for whose sake I despise every possession of present things with my whole soul and to the uttermost, for I

f. 190 b

was born of humble folk, and we were brought up orphans and poor, I and my brother Andrew; we had not much possession, and for that reason I am accustomed to poverty, enduring privations, in travel and other bodily miseries." After he had thus made me his companion, he asked me about my parents, what they were called, and what they were named, and he commanded me to tell him about their family and their names exactly. So I related it truthfully to him, saying, "My father was called Fafestus, he was prominent among the people of Rome, and for that reason Cæsar the Emperor gave him a wife of his own family, who was called Mattidia, and he begat from her twin sons, and he called their names Fafestinus and Fafestinianus; and after them he begat me, but I did not know my mother at all, for some time after she gave me birth, my mother saw at last a dream, as my father told me, that if she did not flee with her twin children to another country, we should all die. So my father put my mother with her sons into a boat and gave them much goods, and an escort, and slaves, and other necessary things, and sent them to Athens that the boys might learn letters; but he kept only me with him to console him. And after a year he sent to my mother, with some people, silver to Athens for maintenance, and these people also did not return. So in the third year he sent others, and they came back to him in the fourth year, and said to him that they had not found my mother nor my brothers nor their companions. And my father was very sorrowful, and he put his office in charge, and left me and Rome and everything, and went into a boat to seek my mother and my brothers and those who were with him. But from that time he did not return, and did not send us a letter at all and I think that on account of his many griefs for them death

f. 191 a has overtaken him, or he has been drowned in the sea. And it is now twenty years that I have not heard news of him." When Peter heard this, he began to weep, like one bereaved, and he said to those who were with us in the boat, "Know, my dear friends, that when griefs and afflictions assail believers, they are patient under them, knowing that on account of them

they deserve the pardon of their sins, and they shall attain to everlasting joy on account of their present grief; whereas miserable heathens both endure affliction here, and after death also they shall be afflicted on account of their infidelity in the punishment that has no end." And when Peter preached this to us, we saw an island before us, called Aradus. And some of its people begged Peter to come into it for a little rest, and he obeyed them. And this was by the guidance of God that I might find my mother there. When we got out on the island, each went where he liked, and Peter, by the guidance of God, went round many ways. And a poor woman turned to him, and begged alms from him. And he said to her, "Why, O woman, dost thou not work with thy hands, and nourish thyself by thy labour? yet thou seekest thy food from others." And she answered, "I have somewhat in the form of hands, O my Lord, but they are paralysed and useless, and I cannot do the least service with them." Then she wept and heaved a great sigh. And Peter was grieved in sympathy with her weeping, and begged her to tell him about her misfortune and her grief, so she said to him, "I am of a great family in Rome, and I had a husband illustrious in power, and three male children. But when my husband's brother saw my beauty, he wished to persuade me to adultery, and I had a great longing for chastity, for it is an honourable thing, and I fled from my country, that my husband might not know this thing, and kill me and his brother together, and I should be the cause. So thus I told a lie to my husband, that I had seen a dream that I should travel with my two sons, that we might not die all of us. So he sent me to Athens that our sons might learn literature in books; and when we were travelling by sea, there came on us during the last night a great commotion in the sea, and our boat was wrecked, and every one in it was drowned, excepting poor unfortunate me. I took hold of the rudder, and by its means f. 191 b I got to the land; and I was trembling and half-dead. When day came, I searched for my boys and did not find them. And some peasants came and found me naked; and they clothed

me, and comforted me, and brought me to this village; and a poor widow woman took me to her house. Every day she comforted me, saying that her husband had been a sailor and had been drowned in the sea, and I, from the greatness of my grief and the trembling of my hands had taken a staff in my hands; and on this side I am bewitched; and this woman who received me is in great weakness, and is lying paralysed in her house; she cannot move, and there is nothing for us to live upon except a little alms which people give us, and we live in great privation together." And when Peter heard her speech, he knew that she was my mother, and he asked her, saying, "What were thy husband and children called, and what were their names?" and she said unto him, "My husband was called Fafestus, and my sons were Fafestinus and Fafestinianus, and the little one was called Clement," and she finished her narrative. And Peter said to her by the guidance of God, "Hail, O woman! for in this very day thou shalt see thy son." And he commanded her that she should not make a disturbance till we should get away from the island. Then he took hold of her hand, and brought her to the boat. And when I saw how Peter was leading the woman, I smiled, not knowing the reason, and I went to meet him, and do him honour, and take his hand; and Peter said to her, "This is Clement," and she embraced me and kissed me, weeping. But I was very angry, as I did not know the reason, so Peter said to me, "Let thy mother have pleasure in thee." When I heard this, I wept, and fell down to kiss her feet. All the bystanders were astonished at me, that I was rich and eloquent, and the son of great people, and my mother thus in poverty in a measure. We wished to go away from that island, so Peter said to my mother that she should go into the boat and travel with us. And she answered him, "I beg of thee, O my lord, to allow me  
f. 192a first to go and take leave of my companion, for she received me for the Lord's sake, and entertained me according to her means, when the poor woman was in health, and now she is bed-ridden and paralysed." Peter admired the beauty of my mother's resolution. And he commanded, and they brought the paralysed

woman before him, and he spoke thus to her in the hearing of all, "If I have been preaching the truth, stand up whole, that these present may believe that the one God created all the world," and for the sake of God by a miracle the paralysed woman stood up, and became entirely whole, and did homage to the physician, and thanked him for his kindness, as was fitting. When my mother saw this miracle, she was astonished as well as all the rest of the by-standers, and she begged Peter that he would cure her also. Then Peter put his hand on her, and she was cured immediately. Thereupon my mother thanked the Apostle, and I paid a thousand dirhems in silver to the chief man in the island, because they had received my mother among them, and I commanded him to distribute them in alms, by reason of my love for the poor and the deserving, and we travelled together with my mother, after that Peter had baptized the woman who had received her and others, and all those who believed in the teaching of the Apostle, and we went from thence in circuit from one country to another, till we arrived at Laodicea where Aquila and Niceta met us and received us as was fitting to stranger-guests. When Peter saw the greatness of this city and the multitude of its people, he resolved to stay there many days, that he might preach the word of faith. Thereupon Niceta and Aquila asked me about my mother, saying, "Who and whence is this woman your companion?" Then Peter told them her story from its beginning to its end. When they heard his speech, they remained astonished for many hours, and after that they cried thus with tears, saying, "We are her sons Fafestinus and Fafestinianus, the brothers of Clement." Then they related before their mother all that had happened to them with the sailors, saying, "Our boat was wrecked, and immediately there was a boat beside us in which were pirates. f. 192 b They took us with them in their boat, and went with us to Cæsarea Philippi, and changed our names and sold us. A well educated and very rich woman bought us, named Justa. She loved us as her own sons, and brought us up in all the knowledge of the Greeks, and when we grew older, behold, we were taught philo-

sophy also, that we might preach and teach the heathen, to lead them to the true faith. We desired to learn the deceitfulness and vanities of idols. After that we met with a man called Simon, for he imagined he would deceive us according to his polluted determination, but by the doing of God we made friends with one of the disciples of the Christ, called Zacchæus, and he taught us to leave Simon; he led us to Peter, the Apostle of the Lord, and he exhorted us and baptized us. Thus we pray God that He would count thee worthy also of holy baptism." When they had related this, they embraced my mother, weeping with copious tears and joyfulness. Thereupon I sought from the Apostle Peter that I might attain to holy baptism. He commanded me also to fast for the same number of days as those who were fasting diligently. We implored him to baptize us, for we had eaten nothing since the time that we entered the boat; as my mother testified. We implored him also to baptize us that we might eat bread with her, that we might rejoice in spirit, for I was not baptized, and I had not eaten at one table with them all. But Peter, that he might not sin before God, as he was a Saint, and that he might also fulfil our desire, commanded us to fast along with him, all that day and the next, that we might be worthy of holy baptism, and thus he did. And after our baptism Peter took bread, and blessed and sanctified the bread, and brake it, and gave it first to my mother, and afterwards to us, and we eat, rejoicing and glorifying God. And after that an old man came to us and spoke thus to Peter, "Do not be deceived, O man, and do not pray, for God has no existence, and there is no Providence of God, but only a  
 f. 193 a Fortune to every man, and all that is destined to happen to a man, good or bad, he enjoys it whether he prays or does not pray, as I know from experience; for I was very well off, and much respected, and I did good to the poor by much alms, that the gods might help me, and that no sorrow might attack me from anything that was destined to happen to me. But the gods could not keep me without misfortune." This and more than this the old man said to Peter. But Peter contradicted his



speech, and shewed him the truth, saying that there is one God only, who is immortal, and who has foreordained all things in His just wisdom, and some of them by His forbearance; and afterwards Peter asked him to tell him whence he was, and what trials had befallen and happened to him. He answered him, saying, "I was among the grandees of Rome, well-versed in the art of astrology and I married a woman of the family of Cæsar the Emperor, and I begat three boys of her, and it was written against her in her fate that she was to become corrupt, for she loved one of her slaves; and when she could not abide the judgement of people about her, she fled with him to another country. She took with her the older boys, and left the youngest with me, and lo! she married this slave, and thus she died with her sons. But my young boy remained in my house, and at last I went to seek the woman and her sons, and my young boy was lost also, and here am I going about from place to place, and I cannot return to my home on account of my confusion, and I now get my food by much toil and moil." When Peter heard that, he knew that the old man was my father in truth, and he asked him about his name, and about the name of his wife and his sons. He answered him, "My name is Fafestus, and my wife is Matthidia, and my sons Fafestinus and Fafestinianus, and the young one Clement." Thereupon I wept, and Peter, and therewith I went to my mother and announced to her that I had found my father, her husband. She went out crying and weeping and seeking him, and when she recognized him she remained for many hours silent from excess of joy as if she were dead. Then we three boys came and did obeisance to our father and we said to him, "We are thy sons." All that day we had indescribable joy, and we thanked the All-powerful God who had thought us worthy to enjoy one another. Afterwards, behold, Peter held discussion with my father, and exhorted him to believe in the Christ, forbidding him to talk such nonsense as he had done at first, and to believe that God is true, "and in the fulness of His wisdom He foreordained that these misfortunes should come upon you, and that the boat should be

f. 193 b

wrecked, and that you should be parted from each other, that after these sorrows that befel you, you should come together again, and be enlightened in the true faith." At length by much exhortation and plain teaching my father knew the truth, and came to true worship. When he believed in the Christ and was baptized, he was filled with divine zeal, so he took leave of Peter, and went to dispute with Simon Magus, for he was in Antioch at that time. When Simon saw that my father looked like a magician in the eyes of the people, that unrighteous one made an exchange, and began to be disguised and shew his devilish tricks, and my father also began to be disguised and to work and make himself as if he were Simon Magus. Then the infidel Simon made his form like the form of my father, because the Emperor had sent troops from Rome to seize Simon and bring him bound to Rome as he was a seducer and magician, and kill him according to his deserts. So the deceiver, that he might escape from this misfortune, disguised himself in the form of my father, that they might kill him instead of Simon; but Simon fled to the land of Judæa and was absent. Then afterwards when our father came from Antioch to us, and we beheld him like Simon, we were astonished. Then Peter heard from the Antiochenes that Simon was teaching all the people of Antioch his godlessness and inciting them to kill the Apostle Peter when he went to them, as a seducer and a deceiver, and they were now all prepared to fulfil the saying of Simon. When Peter heard that, he sent my father with my two brothers and my mother and other people, that they should go to Antioch, saying to my father, "Go now, O Fafestus, to Antioch, and shew the form of Simon, and preach to the crowd as from his mouth, that they may know the truth, and believe that God is in truth one and eternal, and such like." So my father went joyfully to Antioch, according to Peter's command to him, and he stood in the midst of the city and called thus: "Know, O people of Antioch, that we wronged Peter when we suspected him, for this man is a Saint, and I have accused him falsely in vain; but now I beg you to receive him when he comes and to believe and trust in his teach-

f. 194 a

ing, for he is the Apostle of the true God who never lies, and do all that he commands you. If you do not thus to him, he will destroy you all and your city together. I came for this purpose to give you news, lest you should do evil to him, for angels appeared to me last night and beat me as in truth an infidel and hater of warning, so I beg this of you. Know this also, that I came to you the other time, and I deceived you by the working of the devil, and I made a wicked speech about Peter, so do not trust me, for I confess to-day publicly before you that I am a seducer and a magician, but now I have returned to repentance, in hope that God will forgive my sins." When my father spoke thus to the Antiochenes from the face of Simon and blessed and praised Peter, he immediately changed the mind of all the Antiochenes, who had formerly hated the Apostle, and made them love him, my father sent us word to come there that he might enjoy the sweetness of Peter's exhortation. I immediately went with Peter and the rest of our companions. All the Antiochenes received him with great joy as a true prophet and an Apostle of God. He prayed, f. 194 b and put his right hand upon the sick, and cured them all; and he taught a great crowd to believe in God, the Trinity in persons, and he confirmed the true faith. Then my father fell at Peter's feet, imploring him to make him a Christian, and perfect him by holy baptism, that he might return to his previous form, and attain to the divine mysteries. So Peter commanded him to weep and fast till the morrow, and on the second day he exhorted him much and many others, and taught them how to walk in the orthodox faith blameless; and he baptized them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost; and he afterwards stayed there many days teaching the Antiochenes. And we all suffered many trials from the devil, the enemy of the truth. When the Governor heard that we were of the family of Cæsar the Emperor, he sent to inform the Emperor Tiberius of this. The Emperor, when he knew it, sent to say to him to send my father and mother to Rome quickly. The Governor gave them great gifts, and honoured them much,



and sent them. When the Emperor saw my father and mother, he wept much from the excess of his joy, and he fell upon their necks, kissing them, and he spoke thus to the rest of his lords: "Rejoice with me, all of you, this day, and come, let us make a public feast for our finding of Fafestus and Matthidia; for we supposed them dead, and they have risen, and lost, and they are found." He made them a great table, and eat with them. Then he gave them much gold, and slaves, and guards, and other splendid gifts, because of the nobility of their race, that they might live according to their former custom. And behold they were known in Rome for their virtues and true worship, keeping the faith of the Christ immovable. At last they distributed the whole of their goods among the poor, and fulfilled all good works, and completed  
f. 195 a their lives in what was pleasing to God. They forsook present things, and they inherited heavenly things. But I and my brothers did not part from our Teacher Peter at all, but we were continually with him, in obedience to him and in his travels; we bore with him all sorrows and sufferings of various kinds from the infidels in the towns and villages when we went to preach the Gospel. At last we arrived at famous Rome, and Peter preached in it publicly about the Christ, and wrought many miracles, and turned many to the faith, and baptized them, not only among the humble, but many rich folk, and women of the imperial house, among whom was the Mistress of the Ceremonies. Now when Peter resolved to go to the Christ our Teacher, he saw a divine vision, that after a few days he should be crucified, that he might become a sharer in the pains of his Lord. So he collected all the brethren, and stood in the midst of the church, and took my hand and spoke thus to the crowd: "Know this, O my brethren and my children, that I have arrived at the end of my life, inasmuch as my Lord the Christ has appeared to me, and behold, I appoint Bishop over you this my disciple Clement, and I establish him upon the chair as your Shepherd from to-day; for he has been a sharer in all my trials and griefs

which we endured, and I know him that he is a servant of God who loves men; pure and chaste, good, true, and long suffering, so he will be patient in griefs and other hostile things which will come to him. For this reason I give him power to loose and to bind whatever is necessary, for he knows the canons of the church very well. You must all be submissive to him, for whosoever murmurs against the true chief is angry with God, and shall inherit the death and the torments of rebels. The leader too must be like the true physician, and not be angry and passionate for want of knowledge." When Peter spoke thus, I f. 195 b fell at his feet, excusing myself from the headship. He said to me, "Do not oppose the will of God, O my son." He turned to the crowd, and commanded them all to walk in faith in all purity and blamelessness, to love one another; and if one happens to be vexed or angry with another, let him make friends with him before the sun goes down. Let them not judge any one, but pardon whomsoever has sinned against them, that God may forgive and pardon them their sins. Then he commanded them all also to shew me great respect, as the respect they had shewn to him; and when he had exhorted them with these and other like exhortations, he sat in the chair and said to me, "I beg thee to write to James the Lord's brother after my death and exodus from life all that has happened to thee since thy youth and what has happened to us in our journeys until this day and my departure, and the completion of my testimony, and how I have glorified God by my death, being crucified, as the Lord has borne me company. For when he hears this, he shall attain to great joy and consolation." But I Clement, that I might respond to the command of my teacher Peter, have written to thee, O my lord James, and have sent to thee briefly all that has happened to me. Do thou pray for me to the Lord that he may count worthless me worthy to tend what has been entrusted to me with a care well-pleasing to God, and that I may end my life by martyrdom.

## STORY OF THE MARTYRDOM OF SAINT CLEMENT.

THUS far is the letter of this Blessed Clement, which he wrote with his hand to the Apostle James, from which every one can understand the greatness of his love to the Lord and his zeal for the true faith, so that he may know still further from the end of this Blessed one by martyrdom, for he experienced in it a threefold blessedness with courage that he might glorify the Lord and strengthen the true faith, inasmuch as he was a good  
f. 196 a disciple to Peter and worthy of the succession to his chair, for he was like his Teacher in virtues with good habits and exertions and other virtues. He was a teacher to the Jews and the Gentiles, and he was with every one like every one that he might gain all to stand in true worship to the Christ. He was very humble, sweet in his address and his exhortation, so that the Greeks and the Jews had a great love and respect for him, for he did not shew himself stern and fault-finding, but explained to them with great humility and gentleness the evidences from their books, that his speech might be worthy of his trust. He did not upbraid any of them and did not neglect them at all; to the ignorant he explained about their idols one by one what and who they were, and he explained to them their contemptible character and he taught for what reason they imagined them gods. At the end of his exhortation he continually preached about the greatness of the pity of the true God, and the fulness of His mercy; he incited them to repentance and promised them that the kingdom of heaven should be open to those of them who returned on condition only that they should desist from their former sins, believe in the Christ, and be baptized; and that God would receive them. As for the Jews, he praised them in

the beginning of his discourse, saying that they were the chosen people of God, because they were of the race of Abraham, and such like praises, and at the end he did honour to the New Testament and he did not despise the Old one, so that they might not doubt ; but he finished his speech with wisdom and thus he wrought much profit to many, guiding and leading every one by his discourse to the true faith. He took care also of the organization of the Christians continually, undertaking the affairs of the poor, that none of the necessities of the body might be wanting to them, neither to men nor to widow women nor to orphans belonging to the city. He wrote them all down in a register, and he gave each of them alms in suitable measure to carry on his life. Thus did the pitiful Clement, in mercy like the Christ. All the Emperor's Court honoured and respected him, except one of them, whose name was Socinius. He f. 196 b related much to the Emperor Nero. This man hated him, and told the Emperor of his own invention how Clement had converted his wife Theodora from the worship of the idols, and that she was not now attending to her house or her children, but was continually going to the church of the Christians to learn their doctrines. This hatred was in the heart of Socinius, and he was armed every day with the armour of iniquity and jealousy and envy lurking in his heart towards the Saint. He designed evil against his wife Theodora when he should find a convenient season, and one day he acted treacherously. There was a gathering of the Christians, so he went and hid himself in the church with his slaves to see what his wife was doing there. When he arrived at the church, the Saint was praying at the moment, and immediately Socinius remained blind and deaf. He said to his slaves, "Take me and lead me that I may go to my house, for blindness and deafness have come suddenly upon me, and behold, I neither see nor hear at all." The slaves led him by his hand, and wished to try and go out of the church, and they could not ; but they went round here and there without avail, for the Divine Power prevented them, that this senseless [man] might be educated and punished. When Theodora saw him thus, she

asked the reason of it. They told her his story, and she implored the Lord with tears to be gracious to him about going out, and it was so. His slaves brought him to his house, and put him to bed blind and deaf by the act of God. When Theodora returned to her house, they told her his story in detail. She was grieved, and shewed kindness to him, and went and fell at the Saint's feet, imploring with tears that he would cure her husband. So Clement went to the house of the sick man, and wept over him, and implored God, praying for him and saying, "O Lord Jesus the Christ, Thou who hast given the keys  
f. 197 a of Thy kingdom to Thy Apostle Peter that he may open and shut to whom he wills, open Thou the eyes and the ears of this man, for thou hast promised us to give us along with Thy salvation all our petitions." When the Saint prayed thus for the sick [man] he was immediately cured of his bodily blindness, and heard with his bodily ears, but his soul remained still in the former error. He imagined that the Saint was a wizard, and did these things by his enchantments, and the blind sight of the poor [man] was just as at first in error. So the thankless one commanded his servants to seize the Saint at that time and to bind him, that he might repay him for his grace by its opposite. But the servants seized wood and stones, thinking they were the Saint, and bound them, for they were bewildered by Divine retribution. Socinius thought that his slaves had bound the Saint, and he boasted against him, saying to him, "Thus, O Clement, I make vain quickly thy sorceries and thy deceit that thou mayest be educated." But the Saint was preserved unbound, and came forward and said to him, "Thus, O senseless [man], thy heart has been blind, O miserable being; do not think that thou bindest me; but I bind thy gods whom thou worshippest from the first," and he left him despised and humbled. Then the Saint blessed Theodora and commanded her to pray to God without ceasing for her husband, that he might turn to the true worship, and she prayed, imploring God for him with tears, and in the evening there appeared to her a venerable man with a white beard, in the likeness of Peter



the Apostle, and said to her, "For thy sake I have cured thy husband, in order that the husband may be sanctified by the wife, as my brother Paul the Apostle commanded." When he spoke thus to her, he departed immediately, and Socinius, by the act of Divine grace, called his wife, and said to her, "I believe in my Lord Jesus the Christ, the only true God, to whom I have prayed that He would forgive me my former follies, and secondly wilt thou mediate for me with Saint Clement, that he may not feel angry with me the thankless one, inasmuch as he is a disciple of God, that he may have compassion on me?" When the woman heard that, she rejoiced and wept, and she at once told that to the good [man]. He hastened at once and came to the house of Socinius, who received him with much humility, and fell at his feet weeping passionately and said to him with a contrite heart, "I thank the true God and thy Holiness because thou didst blind my bodily eyes and enlighten my soul, that I might know the truth and flee from the error of the Greeks and their falsehood, for with my whole heart I have accepted warning in the true faith." It was then the feast of Easter, so there was then a great festival in that house, and Socinius and all his people were baptized, and his friends and his slaves, both men and women, and their number was 423 persons, and there were many among them who were friends and acquaintances of the Emperor. But when Publius the (director?) of all saw this, he was grieved that the faith was then growing and increasing, so he took it into his head to kill the Saint who was the cause of all these things; and he paid silver to some people, and agreed with them that they should make a commotion with the Governor of the city and accuse the Saint before him, that they might incite him to kill him speedily; and these people came to the Governor and accused the Saint as a seducer and a wizard, that he blasphemed the gods, and destroyed their temples from the foundations, and worshipped a new god, and built churches and altars to him in every place. Then those who had not received bribes praised the Saint before the Gover- f. 197 b

nor, telling of the miracles and the good works which he did to all the city. When the Governor saw the greatness of the talk and commotion of the crowd he called the Saint secretly, and tried him with many flatteries that he should return to his error. When he saw that he was firm and bold and unshaken, he sent news of him before the Emperor Tiberius, saying to him that there had been a great commotion in the city on account of Clement. The Emperor decided about him that they should banish him to a desert town which is in the borders of the Chersonesus. The Governor grieved about the Saint because he was destined to go  
f. 198 a to this bitter exile. He sent for him, and commanded him to offer the mid-day sacrifice to the idols, and not go into this exile. The Saint wished by the eloquence and sweetness of his accents to convert the Governor to faith in the Christ. When the Governor saw the Saint's want of submission, he dismissed him, sighing and weeping, saying to him, "The God whom thou servest, he will help thee in this hard exile." He then provided him with all his necessities, and sent him in a boat, and embraced and kissed him, and sent him away. Many conscientious men followed him into exile. He found there some thousands of Christians, oppressed and previously exiled, who were cutting marble there. When they saw the Saint, they rejoiced much; they did homage to him, kissed his hands respectfully, and told him their misfortune and privation, and their want of even what was most necessary; worse than all that, they had no water to slake their thirst by reason of their work and fatigue and the greatness of their misery; but they had been going and fetching the water from a far place, at a distance of 45 bow-shots. The Saint had pity on them, weeping; then he comforted them much, saying to them, "It is the will of God that we should be exiled, and should be sharers in torments and sufferings." When he said this, he commanded them all to make solemn prayer together with him, imploring Almighty God to give them water as He is pitiful. When the Saint had finished his prayer, he looked here and there, and saw from afar a lamb lifting its right foot and pointing to the earth before it; no one saw the lamb save the

Saint. He went with three men, and said to them, "Dig this place where the lamb was standing." When they had made a little hole, the good [man] took the axe with his hand and dug a little with it, and spoke thus, "In the name of our Lord Jesus the Christ, let fresh sweet water rise in this place." When he had spoken thus, what miracles are thine, O Christ, the Almighty King! immediately water flowed out there copiously, f. 198 b and formed a great stream, and there was sweet delicious water. The Saint took some of it and drank, and thus they all drank rejoicing. On account of this miracle the people of the villages there honoured the Saint and revered him, and they hastened to him on all occasions and heard the sweetness of his teaching. He converted innumerable people amongst them to true worship, and baptized them in the name of the Holy Trinity; he destroyed the idol-temples and built churches for them; for in the course of years from his stand-point there the Saint built for believers 75 churches; he burnt and razed all the idols, and abolished all traces of them. When the Emperor learned [this], he sent to Aphidianus the governor to agitate on every side, so as to do away with the faith of the Christ. So the Governor persecuted many of the Christians there with divers punishments. When he saw that they were all desirous to be martyrs for the sake of the Christ, and were prepared for that, he took it into his head to kill the Saint who was the cause of that; so he put upon the Blessed Clement the hardest punishments, and persecuted him much. When he saw that he was the more desirous of martyrdom, and that he strengthened and confirmed the believers, he condemned him to death, that they should bind on his neck a thick boat-rope, and throw him into the depths of the sea, that the believers might not find his honoured body. When they threw him into the sea, many of the Christians stood near the sea mourning and weeping for their teacher. Cornelius and Fifus his disciples cried with inconsolable grief and commanded the others all to pray to God in company, imploring Him to bring out the Saint's body to the earth. When they all prayed together, weeping, a great marvel took place, for once upon

a time Moses accomplished a surprising miracle in the Red Sea, but here a miraculous wonder took place and was accomplished, f. 199 a that the sea fled back twenty miles, and the Christians went forward on dry land. How surpassing is thy power, O Almighty Christ! They found a great hewn stone like a church, adjusted by wonderful art through the astonishing wisdom of God, and in its midst a splendid temple. There was the body of the honoured Saint laid out shining, and near that great heavy stone that coarse rope mentioned above. Cornelius and Fifus wished to lift the Saint, but they heard a celestial voice saying thus to them, "Leave [him] where the wonderful Lord has buried him." So they left him, and by this power till now every year in honour and remembrance of the Martyr the sea turns backward on the day of the commemoration of the Saint and stays thus for seven days, that the faithful may come and celebrate his holy feast. When the crowd heard this voice, they glorified God, and only kissed the Saint's body, and returned rejoicing. The miracle happened not at this time only, as well as other astonishing miracles, but every year in commemoration of this Saint the sea runs backward as we have mentioned, and gives the people time to celebrate the holy feast. At that time there were many other miracles, for all who went there and were sick of diseases and drank the water of that sea where was the temple of this Saint, were cured of all their sicknesses. After a few days, all the Christians who lived near that place went when they saw these miraculous wonders, but they heard a wonder greater than all these wonders, inasmuch as there was a believer who had great faith in this Saint. He went to worship the Saint in his temple above mentioned with his wife and his companions, and he had a little son. When their return was near, they stood in the temple of this Saint, praying that God would give their boy a long life and other things. When the sea was about to return to its place, the parents of the lad fled with others of the Christians with great f. 199 b speed lest the sea should cover them; from fear and great confusion they left the lad there; they did not suppose that the water of the sea would cover him like the grave. Then when they sought him

and found him not, they knew that he had remained in the temple of the Saint. They wept for him much and returned to their dwelling. When they saw his clothes also, their grief for him increased, and they were inconsolable. When this year had gone by, and the feast of this Saint came round, these [people] went to search lest they might find the bones of their son. When the sea turned back according to its custom every year, they hastened before every one to the temple of the Martyr. When they arrived there, they found their boy standing near the grave of the Saint. They at first doubted it, and thought it was a hallucination. When they looked at him well, and were sure he was their son, they hugged him and kissed him, and wept from the greatness of their joy. They asked him, "Whence have you got to eat this year, and how have you been kept from the sea-monsters without harm?" The boy pointed with his finger to the Saint and said, "He feeds me and protects me." Then the grief of his parents turned into joy, and they thanked God saying, "God is wonderful in His Saints," and such like things in praise of God. When they had finished the feast, they returned to their dwelling rejoicing, happy, and glorifying God, who had been doing His dread will and honouring them. The martyrdom of this Saint was on the 24th day of November, and we ask the Lord our God to grant us his mediation, and to count us with him in the kingdom of the Heavens, Amen.

Poor Macarius the Antiochene wrote it with his mortal hand, and translated it from the Greek language to the Arabic language, in the year 7167 of the world, corresponding to 1659 from the Incarnation of the Christ, on the 22nd of October, and it was written in the fortress-city of Sinope.

## THE PREACHING OF PETER.

IN the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, one God.

This is the preaching of Simon Cephas, chief of the Disciples, and their leader, Peter, when the Christ, our Lord and our God, sent him to preach in the city of Rome.

God called Simon Cephas, and spoke to him, saying, "Simon, Simon, chief of the disciples, Rome wishes for thee; go out therefore to these people, whom the devil has led astray." And when Simon, the disciple of God, heard this, he began to weep before<sup>1</sup> God, and to say, "My God, whither shall I go, and I an aged man, I cannot walk, and I have neither gold nor silver, nor yet manners, how can I then go? I shall die like him who goeth to destruction. I desire of thee, O Lord, that thou wouldst  
page 2 pardon me, and cause me to die in Jerusalem<sup>2</sup>, where Thy passion took place, I will then die at Thy word." And the Lord said unto Simon, "Do not begin to fear in thy heart. I give unto thee the power of the kingdom, therefore fear not, go, and enter among them. Fear not, speak to the sick, and they shall recover; say to the blind 'See,' and they shall see; and if they do not receive and take hold of thy word, they shall learn that I am in Heaven; therefore speak to the earth, and it shall swallow them up; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, I will bind it in Heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt loose on the earth, I will loose it in Heaven. I am in Heaven, and thou art in the strange country. Thou shalt call to me from afar, and I will answer thee from at hand."

<sup>1</sup> Literally 'betwixt the hands of.'

<sup>2</sup> Or 'the holy house.'

And Simon said, "My God, forsake me not! I have trusted in Thee, and if thou forsakest me, I shall sink down to the lowest depth."

Then Simon stood up towards his brethren and his friends, with his tears flowing, and said, "Arise, my brethren, all of you, page 3 and call to mind the love which was between us, and abound in your prayers for me in this journey which God has given me; for like a dead man I go out from amongst you, therefore plead for me in your prayers."

And they said unto him, "Go in peace, O holy one, and may the God who is in Heaven be with thee, and the right hand which divided the sea before the children of Israel be with thee, O holy one of God, O pillar of the faith. Go, and may the angel of the Lord be with thee, and help thee upon thy way, and against thy enemy."

And Simon Peter crossed the sea until he came to the city of Rome. And they collected together when they saw him, and they began to say amongst themselves, "In truth this poor needy man has come. He is a seditious and weakly fellow, and he page 4 wears ragged clothes, and there are many poor people amongst us, but we never saw one like this one." And the beloved of God fell upon the dung-heap of a rich man, and he was hungry and thirsty, and the cold attacked him, and he had fallen on his face in great remembrance of God.

And the daughter of that rich man went out and looked at him; then she went in and said to her father, "O my father, there is an old man fallen down on our dunghill, like our old slave, and he is in our midst, and one of ourselves, and do bring him in and feed him with the bread that is in our dwelling." And her father answered and said unto her, "Go, my dear, as thou hast said, so be it, and cut short his prayer."

And the girl went out, and did him reverence, and said to him, "Arise, and do not weep, O my father, for thou hast already reached the house, so do not be grieved. Arise, and eat food, and throw care from off thee."

Then stood Simon, chief of the Disciples, with her, that she page 5

might set before him food to eat. And she put a chair for him, and he sat down ; and she set vessels before him of silver and gold ; then he asked water from her, and she went in haste, and came with a golden pot in her hand. And when she came near him she covered her hand.

And Simon said to her, "Tell me, O girl, why dost thou cover thy hand from me?"

And she said to him, "I was afflicted at the time of my going to my husband ; and when my husband came to take me to the house of his family, and the golden crown was upon my head, behold, they shewed me in the market-places ; and when I arrived at the house of my husband, this leprosy appeared in me. Thereupon I was ashamed before my companions, and I returned to my father's house. And I vowed a vow to our gods the idols,  
page 6 and I gave the great price, and I worshipped our heroes, but it is now six months since this disease appeared in me. And therefore I was ashamed, and I covered my hand, lest thou shouldst look at it."

And Peter took that pot of water, and prayed over it, with a conscience upright, acceptable, and spiritual (nothing of the carnal in it). Then Peter took that water-pot, and gave it to the girl, and said to her, "Wash thy body with this water." And when she washed her body with that water, she was cured and cleansed, and she became as though nothing had ever befallen her of that leprosy which she had. And when she saw that, she feared because of it with a great fear. Then she went to her father, who was a door-keeper, and she said to him, "O father, why dost thou sit still? Look at me!" And she uncovered her hand.

page 7 And when her father saw her cured of that leprosy which had appeared in her, he said to her, "Ah! my daughter, what is this which I see in thee this day?"

She said to him, "In truth I tell thee, O father, that the God of truth came in to us this day."

And her father the door-keeper went down to Peter, and said to him, "Cure for me the rest of my daughter's body from



that leprosy, and ask me what thou wilt of gold and silver that I may give [it] thee." Peter said unto him, "I will cure the rest of thy daughter's body from that leprosy, and I wish no gold nor silver from thee, but I wish from thee a single word; that thou wilt believe in my Lord Jesus the Christ, and that thou wilt forsake the worship of idols and of devils whom we do not worship."

And the door-keeper said unto Peter, "I give thee this<sup>1</sup>." And Peter rose, and filled a font in that place where they were, and Peter took the damsel, and dipped her in that font, and cleansed her with that cleansing, and plunged her in that baptism in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. And she was cleansed from that leprosy which was in her as if nothing had ever been formed in her at all (of that leprosy which had been in her). And when her father the door-keeper saw that, he believed in the Christ, and he left off the worship of idols. Then Peter remained with them a day and a night; then after that Peter wished to go out into the city of Rome and see the people. And the door-keeper said to him, "If thou shouldst go to-day to the city of Rome, thou canst not enter and go about in its market-places, for they have a feast and vows, in which they sacrifice to the idols, and if they see thee going about among them in these rags, the gods will kill thee." page 8

And Peter said to the door-keeper who believed in Christ, "I cannot but go to the city of Rome, for my Lord Jesus the Christ sent me as for this day and such as this, and I cannot disobey my Lord." And Peter went away until he entered the city of Rome, and behold, there were in it heralds proclaiming and saying, "Let every person put on gowns and garments, and gold and silver, and purple and pearls, and if not, let him blame no one but himself." And the troops and their priests met Peter, and said to him, "O foolish old man, where art thou going to-day in these rags which are upon thee? If the Emperor of Rome see thee to-day he will kill thee. He who puts on raiment of gold and silver, let him go up to the place of our gods." And Peter page 9

<sup>1</sup> Literally 'This is thine from me.'

said, "O kings, and priests, and troops, this raiment is the raiment of my Lord, who gave [it] to me, He besides whom there is no god."

And they observed that saying, and they were angry at that with a great anger, and they commanded him to be stoned with stones for his speech about the Christ, that He is God.

And when Peter saw that, he came to the place of a temple, where their gods were, and he stood alone. Then he calleth on the Christ with an upright conscience, acceptable and spiritual, (nothing of the carnal was mingled with it in that place), and  
page 11 there the Emperor of Rome went out and many kings and troops, and thousands of priests innumerable, and with him a hundred girls, fifty of them married, and fifty who had never yet gone in to their husbands, and already they were taken and bound for the sacrifice, by a vow to their gods the idols and the devils whom they served, and when Peter saw that, he lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, "My Lord, and my God, I cannot longer endure the thing which I have seen. But yet Thy mercy and Thy power is needed in an hour like this."

And the Christ answered Peter's prayer to Him, and He sent a great cloud and a stormy wind, and it threw down these idols and broke them; and devils came out of them, and took refuge in the mountains. And when the Emperor of Rome saw that, he  
page 12 said to the girls, "Go to your parents;" and he said to the virgin fifty, "Go to your house, for my kingdom perishes by this darkness which is upon this capital. Fire came out of it, and my empire perishes by it in this place." Then came to him a messenger from his house, saying, "O Emperor of Rome, what causes thee to linger, when thy beloved son is dead?" And the Emperor of Rome spoke to the kings, and the troops, and the priests, and the thousands who could not be counted, and they went away with him till they came to his dwelling; and his wife came out and said to him, "O Emperor of Rome, what is thy throne, when thy son, thy loved one, is dead? Come let us weep over our only (child) to-day."

And there came the daughter of the door-keeper, who had

been healed from the leprosy, and she entered to the Emperor of Rome, and said to him, "O Emperor of Rome, what makes thee weep for thy only (child) as (thou dost) this day? There is in the city a weak old man, wearing rags. Seek him, and he will raise this only (child) of thine." page 13

And the Emperor of Rome said to her, "O damsel, thou putttest me to shame. Shall the stones speak, or the blind see, or the dead rise? and how dost thou say that my only (child) shall rise? Come, weep for my only (child) this day, (thou) and all thy companions."

And she said to him, "O Emperor of Rome, dost thou know me?"

He said to her, "Yes, thou art the daughter of the door-keeper, the leprous one."

She said to him, "O Emperor of Rome, I am not leprous." And she uncovered her fore-arm and her face.

And when he looked at her, he said to her, "Ah, thou damsel, how is this that I see thee to-day?"

She said to him, "In truth I say to thee, O Emperor of Rome, that the weak and poor old man whom I mentioned to thee, he it is who has cured me, and he will raise thy son and thy only (child) this day." page 14

And he sent to all the kings and the priests, and said to them, "Seek for this old man of whom this girl speaks." And the kings and the priests sought for Peter, until they met him in the city in his rags. And they brought him in to the Emperor of Rome. And the Emperor of Rome said to him, "O old man, if thou wilt raise my son and my only (child) this day, then mine empire (shall be) thine." And Peter said to him, "Thy son and thy only (child) I will raise, but thine empire I do not want. Yet I want one word, that thou wilt serve my Lord and my God, Jesus the Christ, Creator of Heaven and earth, besides whom there is no God, and that thou wilt leave these gods and idols whom thou servest." page 15

And the Emperor of Rome said to him, "O Peter, this shall be thine if thou wilt raise my son."

And Peter said to the Emperor of Rome, "Send to thy kings, and to the troops, and to the priests among the people of thine empire, those who come in and go out, and assemble them, and carry this thy dead son upon his couch, and come to the place of thy god whom thou servest."

And the Emperor of Rome sent to all the kings and the priests and the captains, and he carried his only son on his couch. And he went to the place of the idols whom he had worshipped, and Peter stood alone by the side of the couch, calling on the Christ, and saying, "My Lord and my God, thou art He who hast sent me to Rome for the welfare and salvation of her people, and thou art He who hast caused the death of this sinner for the salvation of all by my resurrection of him in Thy name; therefore reveal at this time Thy power at my mention of Thy name, and the name of Thy Incarnation." And when he said this, the dead [man], the son of the king, arose from his bed, till he came to Peter; and he did him homage, and said,

"Peace unto thee, O disciple of the Christ,  
Peace unto thee, O holy one of God,  
Peace unto thee, who writest what the angels say to thee,  
Peace unto thee, whose prayer the King has answered, so that my spirit has returned to my body."

Then the dead man who had risen turned to his father, the Emperor of Rome, and said,

page 17 "Woe unto thee, O my father, and what have we worshipped?"

"Woe unto thee, O my father, and what sins are ours?"

"Woe unto thee, O my father, for this old man calls thee to a great God and terrible in power, and the angels hold discourse with this old man!"

"Woe unto thee, O my father, and in what darkness we are!"

"Let the Emperor straightway believe in God this day; and all the kings and the priests."

And the Emperor said to his son, "Tell me thy story."

And the youth said to him, "When I was snatched away, I journeyed to the furthest end of Heaven, and when I went

before the Throne of Glory, this old man was standing there doing homage, and the legions of Angels standing by. And the Lord said from His throne, 'Let the desire of Peter, the captain of My church, be fulfilled.' And at this voice my soul returned to my body." page 18

And the Emperor said to Peter, "O Lord, command us as thou wilt."

And Peter rose, and filled a font in the place where their gods were, and baptized the Emperor and his son, and all his patriarchs, and all the priests and the captains, till Peter was not able to baptize the people from their number, till Peter took some of the water of the font, and sprinkled (it) upon the people, and on whomsoever one drop fell, he was baptized. And all the people of Rome believed ; and Peter dwelt in it preaching, and baptizing, and teaching, and the people came from every side, and were baptized by him, and believed in the Christ, and forsook the world, and renounced family and goods, and sought for faith in the Christ, to whom be glory now and for ever and ever, Amen. And glory be continually to God. And upon us be mercy. Amen. page 19

## MARTYRDOM OF JAMES THE SON OF ALPHÆUS.

THIS is the Martyrdom of James the son of Alphæus, and the end of his warfare on the ninth day of October, in the peace of the Lord, Amen.

It was when James went into the city of Jerusalem to proclaim the holy Gospel in it, and all the wonders of the Godhead, that every one who heard him might believe in God with a pure heart and his soul might be saved. But James the Disciple thought in his heart how the crowd might hear him and believe in God, and that he would go into the temple where the crowd was assembled. And he found many of the Jews gathered together, and he began to preach in the midst of them, with great joy and gladness before their assembly. And he continued his speech, and explained (about) faith in God. And he testified concerning the only Son of God, the Word of life, God of all the ages, Jesus the Christ, that He is the Son of God in truth, and that He is the self-existent with the Father before all the ages. He is in the Father, and the Father is in Him, He who is the Word of the Father. Behold, He said, "Let us make man in our image and form;" and He dwelleth in Heaven with His Father, and He is upon the throne of the cherubim, and the seraphim extol Him. And He it is who is on the right hand of power on high. And He descended into the  
page 2 womb of the Virgin Mary. And He is the Lord Jesus the Christ, to whom the Lady Mary the Virgin gave birth, and He is the God who was made man. This is the confession of the Disciple before that assembly, without fear of any other man.

He testified concerning the birth of the only Son of God, and he testified to His death and His resurrection from the dead, and His ascension to His Father who is in Heaven. And he taught faith in the Christ to all who were present. And when the assembly heard what the Disciple said, they were angry with a great anger, which (was) from their father the Devil, who dwelt in them, against the disciple of the Lord Jesus the Christ. And they helped one another, and took his blood upon them, all who were present and heard his discourse. And they seized the blessed Disciple, and led him to the Emperor Claudius, and set up against him false witnesses. And they said to the Emperor, "This man is a seducer. He goes round about countries and cities, and he says, 'I am the servant of Jesus the Christ.' And he hinders them from obeying the Emperor." And when the Emperor heard this about the blessed Disciple, he commanded him to be stoned with stones until he was dead. And the Jews (may God curse them!) stoned him as the Emperor had commanded. And such was the Martyrdom of the Disciple James the son of Alphæus, brother of Matthew, on the ninth day of the month of October. And he was buried beside the temple in Jerusalem. Glory be to God continually for ever.

## PREACHING OF SIMON SON OF CLEOPHAS.

THIS is the preaching of the blessed and holy Simon son of Cleophas, who was called Jude, which is, being interpreted, Nathanael, who was called the Zealot, and was bishop in Jerusalem after James the brother of the Lord Jesus the Christ.

It was when the disciples were gathered together on the Mount of Olives that they might divide all the cities of the world. And while they prayed and blessed God (may His Name be glorified!) the Lord Jesus the Christ was present in the midst of them, and said unto them, "May the peace of my Father rest upon you, O my pure disciples." And when they cast lots, the lot of Jude the Galilæan came out for the regions of Samaria, that he should preach in them the gospel of the Lord Jesus the Christ. And Simon answered and said unto the Lord, "Be with us, O our Lord, in every place where we dwell, and we will be patient in all that may happen to us. But let my father Peter go out with me, that he may bring me to the land of Samaria." And the Lord said unto him, "Peter's lot is that he should go out to Rome to preach there. But yet let him go out with thee, until he brings thee [there] in peace. And I say unto thee, that after thy preaching and thy calling to them, thou shalt return to Jerusalem after the death of James the Just, and thou shalt be bishop there after him. And thou shalt finish thy warfare like as James the Just (shall have) finished it in that place. And now, friend Simon, go out in peace. May the power of my Father go with thee." And the Lord blessed him, he and all the disciples, and He ascended to Heaven in great glory. And after the ascension of the Lord

page 2



to Heaven, Simon arose and prayed; and he went down to Jerusalem, and Peter with him, and they travelled to Samaria. And he proclaimed in it the good news of the Gospel. And Simon the disciple went into the midst of their synagogue, and proclaimed in it the name of Jesus the Christ. And when the Jews who dwelt in that place heard it, they rose up against him, and smote him with painful blows, and thrust him out of the city. And Peter kissed him and took leave of him. And Simon returned, and stood in their synagogue for three days preaching among them the name of Jesus the Christ. And some among them believed, and some did not believe. And in the last day, the third one, the son of the ruler of the synagogue fell sick, and his name was James, and he died. And one of the men who believed what Simon had said presented himself to the father of the dead lad, and said unto him, "There is here a disciple of the Christ. Call him to pray over the lad." And the man went in haste, and called the Disciple of our Lord the Christ and he came joyfully, and stood over the dead boy, and said to the father of the boy who was dead, "Dost thou believe in Him who was crucified, that He is the Son of God? Thereupon thou shalt see the glory of God." The father of the boy said unto him, "If my son should rise from the dead, so that I see him alive, I will believe in Jesus the Crucified, that He is the Son of the living God." And the Disciple turned with his face to the east, and prayed and said, "My Lord Jesus the Christ, who wast crucified by command of Pilate the Pontius, thou hast thought me worthy of this service, that I should preach in Thy blessed name, because thou hast taken this body for our sake, to save us from the hand of the enemy. Look upon this dead boy, and by Thy will command him to rise, that Thy name may be glorified this day in the midst of this whole city, that they may believe in Thy holy name." And when Simon, the blessed Disciple, said this, he turned towards the place where the dead boy was, and said, "In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, let him rise and stand up alive! And be thou whole, so that all who are present may believe in the name

of my Lord Jesus the Christ!" And in that hour the boy opened his eyes, and rose and sat up. And he commanded that they should offer him something to eat. And when the crowd saw this wonder, they all came forward and bowed down to the earth to the Disciple, and they all believed in God, and they were saying, "There is one God, and Simon is the Disciple of Jesus the Christ. We believe in Jesus the Christ, that He is the Son of the living God." And the parents of the boy threw themselves at the feet of the Disciple, and said, "O our Lord, how may we be saved?" He said unto them, "Believe with all your hearts, and ye shall be saved." And he exhorted them from the  
page 4 holy Scriptures, and he baptized them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, and he gave them the holy mysteries, and commanded them to build a church, and appointed them a bishop, who was the ruler of the synagogue, and his name was Cornelius. And he appointed them presbyters and deacons, and he gave them the holy Gospel. And he stayed with them a month, teaching them the word of God. And after that he returned to Jerusalem. And when the Jews killed James, the disciples were gathered together in Jerusalem. They took Simon and made him bishop in Jerusalem. And he taught them the word of God, and made known to them what was in the Gospel, and the salvation of their souls. And the Jews were angry with him, and he was in Jerusalem giving praise to the Lord Jesus the Christ at all times and seasons, and may the same be to Him for ever and ever. Amen.

## MARTYRDOM OF SIMON.

THIS is the Martyrdom of Simon son of Cleophas, Disciple of the Lord Jesus the Christ. He finished his warfare on the eighth day of the month of May, at peace with the Lord. Amen.

It was after the mourning for James the Just, that Simon son of Cleophas, who was called Jude, became bishop of Jerusalem. And he lived a hundred and twenty years, and he said at the end of his life, "I wish that my blood may be shed for the name of the Lord Jesus the Christ." And he built churches in every place in Jerusalem. And he appointed them presbyters and deacons, and the first church which page 5 he built was in the name of the Lord Jesus the Christ; and the second in the name of the Virgin Mary, Mother of the Lord upon earth, of Him who turned the race of man from the worship of devils, and thought them worthy of His kingdom; and the third he called by the name of Michael, chief of the Angels, who is Mediator for the human race, that wrath may be turned away from them and mercy may rest upon them. And the fourth he called by the name of the Disciple; and he wished the faith of the Jews to be brought to nought, as well as their polluted worship and their wicked synagogue. And he sat preaching the Word of God to everyone, that he should frequent the churches which he had built, and that the knowledge of God might appear to all people from the greatest to the smallest, both men and women. And all of them believed by means of the Disciple, until the people of the city forsook the synagogue of the Jews, and followed the truth which the Disciple taught them by means of the Lord Jesus. But as for the Jews, when they heard of the work of the blessed Disciple, and that he wished the destruction of their worship, and

their exile, they all gathered together, great and small, and took counsel together concerning the Disciple to kill him as [he was] a worker of iniquity. And thus all the Jews assembled against him in anger and hate; and they put him in chains, and delivered him to the Emperor Hadrian. And they together bore witness against him before the Emperor, and said unto him, "Hear us, we make known to thee what this magician does." And the Emperor was angry with a great anger at all that they said against the Disciple, and said unto him, "I say unto thee, O worker of iniquity, it has been told me that thou art a magician, and hast bewitched every one in this town." The Disciple said unto him, "Hear, from me, I pray, O Emperor, who hast neither understanding nor sense, I am not a magician, and I do not know how the art of magic is performed. But I am a servant of my Lord Jesus the Christ, God of all creation, and King of Kings, the powerful God, the Mighty, He who destroys all the gods of the heathen." And when the Emperor heard that speech from the Disciple, he was angry with a great anger, and delivered him to wicked people to crucify him. And the Jews were ravening against him, and they took out the blessed Disciple Simon son of Cleophas to crucify, as the godless Emperor had commanded. And they hanged him on a cross, and tortured him till he died. And he finished his martyrdom on the tenth day of the month of May, and to God the Almighty be glory and honour throughout all ages. Amen.



والصغير وتشاوروا جميعا على التلميذ ليقتلوه انه فاعل الشر :  
<sup>١</sup> وهكذي تجمعوا عليه اليهود كلهم بغضب وحرد وقيده واسلموه  
الى دراينوس الملك وتشاهدوا عليه باجمعهم عند الملك وقالوا له  
اسمع منا نعرفك ما يفعل هذا هو ساحر : وان الملك فى جميع  
٥ ما قالوا غضب غضبا شديدا على التلميذ وقال له لك اقول يا فاعل  
الشر قيل لى انك ساحر تسحر كل من فى هذه المدينة : قال له  
التلميذ لسمع منى ايه الملك الذى ليس له عقل ولا حاسة ليس  
انا ساحر ولا اعرف كيف يعمل صنعة السحر : بل انا عبد لسيدى  
يسوع المسيح اله كل الخليقة وملك الملوك الله العظيم القادر  
١٥ الذى يهلك كل الهة الامر : فلما سمع الملك هذا الكلام من  
التلميذ غضب غضبا شديدا وسلمه الى قوم اشرار ليصلبوه وان  
اليهود يجمعوا عليه واخرجوا التلميذ المبارك سيمون بن كلاوبا  
ليصلب كما امر الملك المنافق وعلقوه على الصليب وعذبوه حتى  
تنيح وتم شهادته فى عشرة ايام من شهر ايار ولله ماسك الكل  
١٥ المجد والكرامة الى دهر الداهرين امين :

<sup>١</sup> Sic in Cod.

## MARTYRIUM SIMONIS.

هذه شهادة سيمون بن كلاوبا تلميذ الرب يسوع المسيح تم  
جهاده فى عشرة ايام من شهر ايار يسالم الرب امين

كان بعد نياحة يعقوب الصديق جعل سيمون بن كلاوبا  
الذى يدعى يهوذا اسقف اورشليم \* وعاش مائة وعشرين سنة \*  
وقال فى اخر عمره اريد ان بهراق دمي على اسم الرب يسوع 5  
المسيح \* وانه بنى كنائسا فى كل موضع باورشليم \* وقسم لهم  
قسوس وشمامسة والكنيسة الاولى التى بناها باسم الرب يسوع المسيح \*  
والثانية باسم العذرى مريم والدة الرب على الارض \* ابعد جنس  
البشر من عبادة الشيطان واهلهم لملكوته \* والثالثة سماها باسم  
ميخايل رئيس الملائكة الذى هو شفيع لجنس البشر حتى رجع عنهم 10  
الرجز وحلت عليهم الرحمة \* والرابعة سماها باسم التلاميذ \* وكان  
حريص ان يعطل امانة اليهود وعبادتهم الدنسة ومجمعهم الشرير \* فانه  
كان يجلس يعظ كل واحد كلام الله حتى عمر الكنايس التى  
بناها وان معرفة الله ظهرت لكل الناس من الكبير الى الصغير  
والرجال والنسا \* فامنوا كلهم على يدى التلميذ حتى ان اهل 15  
المدينة تركوا مجمع اليهود وتبعوا الحق الذى علمهم اياه التلميذ  
من قبل الرب يسوع \* فاما اليهود فلما سمعوا فعل التلميذ  
المبارك وانه يريد يعطل دينهم ومعبودهم اجتمعوا كلهم الكبير

فلما نظروا الجماعة هذا العجب تقدموا كلهم وسجدوا في الارض  
للتلميذ وامنوا كلهم بالله وهم قائلين واحد هو اله سيمن تلميذ  
يسوع المسيح نومن بيسوع المسيح انه بن الله الحي وان ابوى  
الغلام طرحا نفوسهما على رجلى التلميذ وقالا يا سيدنا كيف  
5 نخلص قال لهما تومنا من كل قلوبكما فانتما تخلصا : وانه

page 4 وعظهم من الكتب المقدسة وعمدهم باسر الاب والابن وروح القدس  
واء'اهم السراير المقدسة : وامرهم ان يبنوا البيعة وقسر لهم اسقف  
الذى كان ريس الجماعة واسمه قرنيلىوس : وقسر لهم قسوسا  
وشماسا واعطاهم الانجيل المقدس : واقام عندهم شهرا يعلمهم  
١٥ كلام الله وبعد ذلك رجع الى اورشليم فلما قتلوا اليهود يعقوب  
كانوا التلاميذ مجتمعين في اورشليم : مسكوا سيمن وجعلوه اسقفا  
باورشليم : وكان يعلمهم كلام الله ويعرفهم ما في الانجيل  
وخلص نفوسهم وان اليهود كانوا غضابي عليه وكان في اورشليم  
يسبح الرب يسوع المسيح في كل الاوقات والاحيان وله ذلك  
١5 الى دهر الداهرين امين



سيمون وصلى وانحدر الى اورشليم ومعه بطرس وسار الى السامرة ✥  
 ونادى فيهم ببشرى الانجيل ✥ وان سيمون التلميذ دخل الى وسط  
 مجمعهم ونادى فيهم باسم يسوع المسيح ✥ فلما سمعوا اليهود  
 الساكنين في ذلك الموضع قاموا عليه وضربوه ضربا وجيعا وزجوا  
 به الى خارج المدينة ✥ وان بطرس قبله وودعه ✥ وان سيمون عاد 5  
 وقام في مجمعهم ثلثة ايام ينادى فيهم باسم يسوع المسيح ✥  
 فامن منهم قوم ومنهم قوم لم يؤمنوا ✥ وفي اخر اليوم الثالث اعتل  
 بن ريس الجماعة ✥ وكان اسمه يعقوب ومات ✥ وان رجلا ممن  
 امن بها كان سيمون يقول حضر الى والد الصبي الميت وقال  
 له هوذا تلميذ المسيح هاهنا ادعوه يصلى على الصبي ✥ فمضى 10  
 الرجل مسرعا ودعا تلميذ سيدنا المسيح فحضر بفرح ووقف على  
 الغلام الميت وقال لوالد الغلام الذي مات تومن بالذى صلب انه  
 هو بن الله ✥ عند ذلك ترى مجد الله ✥ قال له ابو الغلام ان  
 قام ابنى من الموت حتى انظره حي انا او من بيسوع المصلوب page 3  
 انه بن الله الحي وان التلميذ عاد بوجهه الى المشرق وصلى وقال 15  
 سيدى يسوع المسيح الذى صلب على عهد بلاطس البنطى انت  
 اهلتنى لهذه الخدمة ان انادى باسمك المبارك ولانك تجسمت هذا  
 من اجلنا لتنقذنا من يد العدوا ✥ انظر الى هذا الغلام الميت  
 وبارادتك فامره ان يقوم لكيما يمجدا اسمك اليوم في وسط جماعة  
 هذه المدينة ليؤمنوا باسمك المقدس ✥ فلما قال سيمون التلميذ 20  
 المبارك هذا عاد الى الموضع الذى فيه الغلام الميت وقال باسم  
 الاب والابن وروح القدس يقوم ينهض حي وتكون سالم لكيما  
 كل من حضر يومن باسم سيدى يسوع المسيح ✥ وفي تلك الساعة  
 فتح الغلام عينيه وقام وجلس وامر ان يقدم اليه ما ياكل ✥

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

## PRÆDICATIO SIMONIS.

هذه بشارّة الطوبان القديس سيمن بن كلّوبا الذي يدعى  
يهوذا الذي نفسه ناثانيل الذي يدعى الغيور وصار اسقف في  
اورشليم بعد يعقوب اخو الرب يسوع المسيح

كان حين اجتمعوا التلاميذ على طور الزيتون ليقتسموا مدن  
5 العالم كلها ✥ وفيما هم يصلوا ويباركوا الله جل اسمه اذ حضر  
الرب يسوع المسيح في وسطهم ✥ فقال لهم سلام ابي يحل  
عليكم يا تلاميذي الاطهار ✥ وانهم تسامحوا فخرج سهر يهوذا  
الجليلي الى بلاد السامرية ✥ وان ينادى فيهم بانجيل الرب يسوع  
المسيح ✥ اجاب سيمن فقال للرب يكون معنا يا سيدنا في كل  
10 موضع نحل فيه ✥ ونحن نصبر على جميع ما يحل بنا ✥ لكن  
يخرج معي ابي بطرس لكي ان يوصلني الى ارض السامرية ✥ قال  
له الرب السهر الذي لبطرس ان يخرج الى رومية لينادي فيها ✥  
ولكن هو يخرج معك حتى يوصلك بسلام ✥ واقول لك انه من  
بعد بشارتك فنداك فيهم انت تعود الى اورشليم بعد موت يعقوب  
15 الصديق وتكون فيها اسقف من بعده ✥ وانت تتم جهادك مثل ما  
تم يعقوب الصديق في ذلك الموضع ✥ فالان يا صفي سيمن اخرج  
بسلام قوة ابي يصحبك ✥ وبارك عليه الرب هو وجميع التلاميذ ✥  
وصعد الى السما بمجد عظيم ✥ وبعد صعود الرب الى السما قام

page 2

شهد على ميلاد بن الله الوحيد وشهد بموته وقيامته من الاموات  
 وصعوده الى ابيه الذى فى السما ✥ وعلم جميع من حضر الامانة  
 بالمسيح ✥ فلما سمعت الجماعة ما قاله التلميذ غضبوا غضبا شديدا  
 الذى من ابهم الشيطان الحال فيهم على تلميذ الرب يسوع  
 المسيح ✥ وتعاونوا كلهم وتقلدوا دمه جميع من حضر وسمع 5  
 كلامه ✥ ومسكوا التلميذ المبارك وقدموه الى اقلوذىوس الملك  
 واقاموا عليه شهود زورا ✥ وقالوا للملك هذا الانسان مطغى ✥  
 يطوف البلاد والمدن ويقول انا عبد يسوع المسيح ✥ ويمنعهم من  
 طاعة الملك ✥ فلما سمع الملك هذا من اجل التلميذ المبارك امر  
 ان يجرهم بالحجارة حتى يموت ✥ وان اليهود لعنهم الله رجموه 10  
 كما امر الملك ✥ وهكذا كانت شهادة التلميذ يعقوب بن حلفى  
 اخو متى فى تسعة ايام من شهر<sup>1</sup> تشير الاول ✥ وقبر عند الهيكل  
 فى اورشليم والسبح لله دائما ابدا

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

## MARTYRIUM JACOBI.

هذه شهادة يعقوب بن حلفى وتنام جهاده فى تسعة ايام تشرين

الاول بسلام الرب امين

كان لما دخل يعقوب مدينة اورشليم لينادى فيها بالانجيل

المقدس وكل العجايب<sup>١</sup> الالهوت لكىما كل من يسمع منه يامن

٥ بالله بقلب نقى ويخلص نفسه ∴ فاما يعقوب التلميذ ففكر فى

قلبه كيف تسمع منه الجماعة وتومن بالله وانه دخل الى الهيكل

حيث تجتمع فيه الجماعة فوجد جمعا كثيرا من اليهود مجتمعين ∴

وانه ابتدا فى اوساطهم يبشرهم بفرح عظيم وابتهاج بين يدى

جماعتهم ∴ واوسع القول وشرح الايمان بالله ∴ فشهد على الوحيد

١٥ بن الله كلمة الحياة اله كل الدهور يسوع المسيح انه هو بن

الله بالحقيقة وانه هو الكاين مع الاب قبل كل الدهور ∴ هو فى

الاب والاب فيه هو الذى كلمة الاب ∴ اذ قال نخلق انسانا بشهتنا

وصورتنا وهو الساكن فى السما مع ابيه وهو على عرش الشاروبيم

والسارفيمر تمجدوه ∴ وهو الذى عن يمين العظمة فى العلا ∴ وهو

٢٥ الحال فى بطن العذرى مريم ∴ وهو الرب يسوع المسيح الذى

ولدته مارتيمير العذرى ∴ وهو الاله الذى تانس ∴ هذا اعتراف

التلميذ بين يدى تلك الجماعة بغير خوف من اخرين الناس ∴

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

كنا فيها يامن الملك فى ذلك اليوم الوقت بالله وجميع الملوك  
 والاحبار وقال الملك لابنه اخبرنى بقصتك فقال له الغلام انى عند  
 ما خطفت صرت الى اقصى السما فلما صرت بين يدى كرسى  
 العزة كان هذا الشيخ واقف ثم يتضرع واجناد الملايكة وقوف وقال  
 الرب من كرسيه تقضى حاجة بطرس ريس كنيسة ومع هذا 5  
 الصوت رجعت نفسى الى جسدى فقال الملك لبطرس ايه السيد  
 امرنا بما شئت فقام بطرس فصب معمودية فى الموضع الذى كانت  
 الهتهم فيه وعمد الملك وابنه وجميع باطارقته وجميع الاحبار والقواد  
 حتى كان بطرس لا يقوى ان يعمد الناس من كثرتهم حتى ان  
 بطرس كان ياخذ من ما المعمودية فيرش على الناس فمن كانت 10  
 تصيبه نقطة واحدة كان يعمد فامن جميع اهل رومية واقام فيها  
 بطرس يكرز ويعمد ويعلم وكان الناس يجوه من كل وجه  
 فيعمدون منه ويامنون بالمسيح ويتركون الدنيا ويهجرون الاهل  
 والمال ويطلبوا الامانة بالمسيح الذى له السبح من الان والى  
 دهر الداهرين امين والسبح لله دايما وعلينا رحمته امين ✧ 15

page 18

page 19

لهذا الشيخ الذى ذكرت هذه الجارية فطلبوا الملوك والاحبار  
 لبطرس حتى اصابوه فى المدينة بخلقائه فادخلوه على ملك رومية  
 فقال له ملك رومية ايها الشيخ ان اقمتم ابنى ووحيدي فى  
 هذا اليوم فلك ملكى فقال له بطرس اما ابنك وحبيبك فانا اقيم  
 5 5 وملكك لا اريد اما اريد كلمة واحدة ان تعبد ربى والاهى يسوع  
 المسيح خالق السما والارض الذى لا اله غيره وترك هذه الالهة  
 والاصنام<sup>1</sup> الذى تعبد فقال له ملك رومية يا بطرس لك ذلك ان  
 اقمتم ابنى فقال بطرس لملك رومية ابعث الى الملوك والشعوب  
 والاحبار من اهل مملكتك ممن داخل وخارج واجمعهم واحمل  
 10 10ابنك هذا الميت على سريره وتعال الى موضع الهتك التى تعبد  
 فبعث ملك رومية الى جميع الملوك والاحبار والقواد وحمل ابنه  
 الوحيد بسريره فجا الى موضع الاصنام التى كانوا تعبدوها فتوحد  
 بطرس الى جانب السرير<sup>1</sup> يدعوا الى المسيح ويقول ربى والاهى  
 15 15انت الذى بعثتنى الى رومية لسلامة اهلها وخلصهم وانت الذى  
 سببت موت هذا الخاطى لخلص الجميع عند اقامتى اياه باسك  
 فظهر فى هذا الوقت قوتك بذكرى اسمك واسر ناسوتك فلما  
 قال هذا قام الميت ابن الملك من سريره حتى اتى الى بطرس  
 فسجد له وقال سلام عليك يا تلميذ المسيح سلام عليك يا  
 قديس الله سلام عليك يا من كاتب تكليمه الملائكة سلام عليك  
 20 20يا من استجاب الملك دعوته حتى رجعت روحى الى جسدى  
 ثم التفت الميت الذى قام الى ابوه ملك رومية وقال الويل لك  
 يا ابتاه وما كنا نعبد الويل لك يا ابتاه واى خطايا كنا فيها الويل  
 لك يا ابتاه ان هذا الشيخ يدعوك الى اله عظيم شديد القدرة  
 وان الملائكة تكلم هذا الشيخ تكليما الويل لك يا ابتاه فابى ظلمة

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

الى السما وقال ربى والاهى لا صبر لى بعد شى اراه ولكن رحمتك  
وقدرتك فى مثل هذه الساعة احتاجها فاستجاب المسيح لبطرس  
دعوته فبعث سحب شديد وريح عاصف فالقيت تلك الاصنام  
فتكسرت وخرجت منها شياطين واوت الجبال فلما رآى ذلك ملك  
رومية قال للجوارى اذهبن انتن الى <sup>١</sup> ابايكم وقال للخمسين 5  
الناقية اذهبن انتن الى <sup>١</sup> بيوتكم فان ملكى قد فتى من تلك الظلمة  
التى كانت على ذلك الشرف منها كان تخرج النار ومنها فتى  
ملكى فى ذلك المقام حين اتاه الرسول من بيته يقول يا ملك  
رومية ما تعردك وابنك وحبيبك قد مات فقال ملك رومية للملوك  
والشعب والاحبار والالوف الذى لا تحصى عدتهم فانصرفوا معه 10  
حتى اتوا منزله فخرجت امراته فقالت له يا ملك روميه اى شى  
جلوسك وابنك وحبيبك قد مات تعال نبكى على وحيدنا اليوم  
فجات ابنة البواب <sup>١</sup> الذى برئت من البرص فدخلت على ملك  
رومية وقالت له يا ملك رومية ما يبكيك على وحيدك اليوم 13  
ان فى المدينة شيخ ضعيف عليه خلقتان ابعث اليه فهو يقيم 15  
وحيدك هذا فقال لها ملك رومية يا جارية تستخزين بى الحجارة  
تتكلم او العمى يبصرون او الموتى يقومون فكيف تقولين ان  
وحيدى يقوم تعالى ابكى على وحيدى اليوم وجميع <sup>١</sup> اصحاباتك  
فقالت له يا ملك روميه تعرفنى قال لها نعم انتى ابنة البواب  
البرصا قالت له يا ملك رومية ليس انا برصى وكشفت ساعدتها 20  
ووجهها فلما نظر اليها قال لها ويحك يا جاريه ما هذا الذى اراك  
فيه اليوم قالت له حقا اقول لك يا ملك رومية ان الشيخ الضعيف  
المسكين الذى ذكرت لك هو الذى ابرانى وهو يقيم ابنك ووحيدك  
فى هذا اليوم فبعث الى الملوك والاحبار كلها فقال لهم اطلبوا

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

فلما رأى أبوها البواب ذلك آمن بالمسيح وترك عبادة الاصنام ثم  
 أن بطرس أقام عندهم يوم وليلة ثم بعد ذلك هوى بطرس أن  
 يخرج في مدينة رومية ويظهر للناس فقال له البواب أن أنت  
 ذهبت اليوم إلى مدينة رومية لم تقدر تدخل وتدور في أسواقها  
 5 فإن لهم عيد ونذور ثم يذهبون فيها للاصنام فإن راوك تدور  
 بينهم في هذه الخلقان يقتلوك الإلهة فقال بطرس للبواب الذي آمن  
 بالمسيح لا بد لي أن أذهب إلى مدينة رومية فإن ربي المسيح  
 لمثل هذا اليوم أرسلني ولا مثال هذا ولا أستطيع أن أعصى  
 ربي فانطلق بطرس حتى دخل مدينة رومية فاذا فيها كرازين  
 10 يكرزون ويقولون من كان من الناس فليلبس الحلل والثياب  
 والذهب والفضة والأرجوان واللؤلؤ والا لا يلوم إلا نفسه فالتفت  
 الشعوب وأخبارهم إلى بطرس كلما به فقالوا له أيها الشيخ الأحق  
 أين تذهب اليوم بهذه الخلقان التي عليك أن أراك اليوم ملك  
 15 رومية قتلك من البس لبوس الذهب والفضة وتعال إلى موضع التبتنا  
 فقال بطرس الملوك والأخبار والشعوب هذا اللباس لباس ربي الذي  
 أعطاني الذي لا اله غيره فانظروا ذلك القول وغضبوا من ذلك  
 غضباً شديداً وتأمروا على أن يرموه بالحجارة لقوله في المسيح  
 أنه الإله فلما رأى ذلك بطرس أتى إلى موضع مشرق حيث كانت  
 20 الاهتبر فتوحد ثم<sup>1</sup> يدعوا المسيح بنية صادقة مقبولة روحانية لم  
 تخالطها شيا من الجسدانية في ذلك المقام فحيث خرج ملك  
 رومية وملوك كثيرة وشعوب وأخبار الآف لا تحصى عدت بهم ومعه  
 11 مائة جارية خمسين منهن متزوجات وخمسين لم يدخلن على  
 أزواجهن بعد وقد أخذن وربطن للذبح نذرا لالتهتهم الاصنام  
 والشياطين الذين كانوا يعبدون فلما رأى ذلك بطرس رفع نظره

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.



- وكان<sup>١</sup> الاكليل الذهب على راسي فاذا رواني الاسواق فلما بلغت بيت زوجي ظهرني هذا البرص عند ذلك استحيت اصحاباتي ورجعت الى بيت ابوية فاندرت نزرًا لالهتنا الاصنام واعطيت الكرا الكبير وسجدت لكبارنا وهذا لى ستة اشهر منذ ظهر هذا الدا بى page 6
- فلذلك استحيت وغطيت يدي ليلا تنظر اليها فاخذ بطوسى ذلك 5 الكوز<sup>١</sup> الما فصلى عليه بنية صادقه مقبولة روحانية ليسى فيها شى من الجسدانى ثم اخذ بطرسى ذلك الكوز الما واعطاه للجارية وقال لها اغسلى بدنك بهذا الما فلما غسلت بدنك بذلك الما بريت وتنقت وصارت كأنها لم<sup>١</sup> يصيبها شى قط من ذلك البرص الذى كان بها ولما رأت ذلك فرعت منه فزع شديد ثم انها اتت ابوها ٢٠ وكان بواب فقالت له يا ابتاه ما يجلسك انظر الي فكشفت يدها فلما راها ابوها قد اشتفت من ذلك البرص الذى كان ظهر بها page 7
- قال لها ويحك يا بنتى ما هذا الذى ارى بك اليوم قالت له بحق اقول لك يا ابتاه ان الاله الحق دخل عندنا اليوم فنزل ابوها البواب الى بطرس وقال له ابرى لى ما بقى من جسد ابنتى من هذا ١٥ البرص<sup>١</sup> وسالنى ما شيت من الذهب والفضة حتى اعطيك قال له بطرس انا ابرى ما بقى من جسد ابنتك من هذا البرص وذهب او فضة لا اريد منك بل اريد منك كلمة واحدة ان تؤمن بربى يسوع المسيح وتترك عبادة الاصنام والشياطين الذى لا نعبد فقال البواب لبطرس لك ذلك عندى فقام بطرس فصب معمودية فى ذلك 20 الموضع الذى هم فيه فاخذ بطرس الجارية فعمدها فى تلك المعمودية وطهوها بذلك الطهور وصبغها فى تلك المصبوغة بسم الاب والابن وروح القدس فاستنقت من ذلك البرص الذى كان بها كانه لم يخلق بها شى قط من ذلك البرص الذى كان بها

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

قريب فقال سمعان الالهى لا تضيعنى انا عليك توكلت فان تتوانى  
 عنى فانى فى اسفل السافلين انحدر ثم ان سمعان قام الى اخوته  
 واصحابه ودموعه تجري وقال قوموا يا اخوتى باجمعكم واذكروا  
 الحب الذى كان بيننا فاكثروا لى من الصلاة فى هذه الطريق  
 5 الذى قد اعطانى الله اياها فمثل الميت اخرج من عندكم فادعوا  
 لى فى صلواتكم فقالوا له اذهب بسلام يا قديس والله الذى فى  
 السما يكون معك واليمين الذى شقت البحر بين يدى بنى اسرائيل  
 تكون معك يا قديس الله يا عمود الامانة اذهب فان ملاك الرب  
 يكون معك ويعينك على طريقك وعلى عدوك فجاز سمعان بطرس  
 10 البحر حتى بلغ مدينة رومية فاجمعوا حين راوه وبدوا يقولوا فيما  
 بينهم بحق ان هذا مسكين محتاج قد جا وهو مرجف وعيان  
 وعليه لباس خلق وبيننا مساكين كثيرة ومثل هذا لم نرى فوق  
 حبيب الله على مزبلة انسان غنى وهو جيعان عطشان وقد اصابه  
 البرد وهو ملقى على وجهه بكثر ذكر الله فخرجت ابنة ذلك الغنى  
 15 فنظرت اليه ثم دخلت فقالت لابيها يا ابتاه ان شيخ مطروح على  
 مزبلتنا مثل العبد الكبير الذى لنا وهو فيما بيننا وفى جوف بيننا  
 قد بخله وتطعمه من الخبز الذى فى منزلنا فاجاب ابوها وقال لها  
 اذهبي يا حبيبتي كما قلتى يكون فحدى صلواته فخرجت الشابة  
 فسجدت له وقالت له قم ولا تبكى يا ابى فقد بلغت البيت فلا  
 20 تحزن قم وكل طعام واطرح الهر عنك فقام سمعان رئيسى  
 التلاميذ معها لكيما تقدم له طعام ياكل فوضعت له كرسى فجلس  
 وقدمت له انبة فضة وذهب فسالها اما فذهبت بسرعة فجاءت بقسط  
 ذهب فى يدها فحين دنت منه غطت يدها فقال لها سمعان قولى  
 لى يا شابة لاهى شى غطيت يدك منى فقالت له كنت محصورة  
 25 وقت دخولى على زوجى فلما اتى الزوج لياخذنى الى بيت اهله

## PRÆDICATIO PETRI.

بسم الاب والابن وروح القدس اله واحد هذا كرز سمعان  
الصفاء رئيس التلاميذ ومتقدمهم بطرس حين بعثه المسيح ربنا  
والاهنا يكرز برومية المدينة

دعا الله سمعان الصفاء فقال له وكلمه سمعان سمعان رئيس التلاميذ  
رومية تريدك فاذهب اخرج الى هاولى القوم الذين قد اطغاهم<sup>5</sup>  
الشيطان فلما سمع ذلك سمعان تلميذ الاله اخذ يبكى بين يدي  
الله ويقول الالهى اين اذهب وانا شيخ كبير وليس استطيع امشى  
وليس لى ذهب ولا فضة ولا دابة فكيف اذهب اموت مثل الهالك  
الذى يهلك اريد منك يا رب تغفر لى وتميتنى فى بيت المقدس  
page 2 حيث كان امرك ثم اموت على كلمتك فقال الرب لسمعان لا<sup>10</sup>  
تجعل الفزع فى قلبك انى اعطيك سلطان الملك فلا تخاف اذهب  
فادخل فيما بينهم فلا تخاف كلم المرضى فيبصرون وقول للعمى  
ابصروا فيبصرون فان لم يقبلوا ويمسكوا كلامك ويعلمون انى فى  
السما فكلم الارض فتبتلعهم وكل شى<sup>1</sup> تربطه فى الارض انا اربطه  
فى السما وكل شى تحله فى الارض انا احله فى السما انا فى<sup>15</sup>  
السما وانت فى الارض الغربية تدعونى من بعيد فاجيبك عن

<sup>1</sup> ربطتوا. Cod.

كرز سمان الصفا رؤس التلاميد  
من النسخة الموجودة فى دير طور سينا  
المكتوبة فى سنة ١٨٣  
من سنين العرب

ما راد طوبوسين يوم الميلاد المحمد  
 بعد العدا من ٢ حنة وعشرين  
 نوحا مصلين دا نون الاول  
 ٢ سنة ما يد وبلده وما بين  
 من سنين العرب والله الشرح  
 ايدا ونحن نسل ربنا ومخلصنا  
 يسوع المسيح ان يرحمنا بصلوات  
 قد الساعده الشرف بطوبوسين  
 وان جعل لها مغه في ملك الساحت  
 ونصب ولعنف لجامتنا اجمع  
 امين استغاثه سيدنا مريم مريم  
 ام النور امين  
 لعمري  
 محمد

قال نوحا فم الذهب  
 اناحي وقدمت من كان فمهم  
 حكما ولفهم ولفظن  
 النفس قد ماتت والحسد بطل  
 ان الحيا فالتا النفس لحننا  
 ويوم الحسد بالحققة  
 والسبح لله دائما  
 امين  
 لعمري  
 محمد

لعمري  
 محمد

قتيبي في هذه الكتاب المبارك العبد الحقير محمد بن محمد

No. 445, with date of MS.  
 (From a photograph by M. D. Gibson.)





الكثير تركوا هناك الصبي ولم يفتنوا بان ما البحر يغطيه كالقبر f. 199 b  
 وحينئذ لما فتشوا عليه ولم يجدوه عرفوا بانه لبث فى هيكل القديس  
 وانهر بكىوا عليه شديدا ورجعوا الى منزلهم ولما نظروا ثيابه ايضا  
 ازداد انتحابهم عليه وكانوا لا سلوة لهم فلما عبرت تلك السنة  
 5 ووافى عيد هذا القديس فذهبوا هولاء ليفتشوا لعلمهم يجدون عظام  
 ولدهم فلما رجع البحر كعادته فى كل سنة الى خلف فتبادروا  
 هولاء قدام الكل الى هيكل الشاهد فلما وصلوا الى هناك وجدوا  
 ولدهم وهو واقفا بقربة قبر القديس فاولا شكوا به وظنوا خيلا ولما  
 نظروه جيدا وتحققوا بانه ولدهم فاحتضنوه وقبلوه ومن كثرة فرحهم  
 10 بكىوا وسالوه من اين كنت تاكل فى هذه السنة وكيف انحفظت  
 من حيتان البحر بغير ضرر وان الولد اومى باصبعه الى القديس  
 وقال هذا كان يعولنى ويحفظنى وحينئذ رجع حزن والديه الى  
 فرح وشكروا الله قائلين عحيبا هو الله فى قديسه وما شابه ذلك  
 من التمجيد لله ولما اكملوا العيد رجعوا الى منزلهم فرحين  
 15 مسرورين مجددين الله الذى يصنع مشيته<sup>1</sup> خافية ويكرمهم وكانت  
 شهادة هذا القديس فى اليوم الرابع والعشرون من تشرين الثانى  
 فنحن نسال الرب الالهنا بان يرزقنا شفاعته ويحصينا معه فى  
 ملكوة السماوات امين كتبه الفقير ماكارىوس الانطاكى بيده  
 الفانية واخرجه من اللغة الرومية الى اللغة العربية فى سنة  
 20 سبعة الاف ومائة وسبعة وستين للعالم الموافق الف وستماية  
 وتسعة وخمسين لتجسد المسيح فى الثانى والعشرون من  
 كانون الاول وكانت كتابته فى مدينة سُناب المحروسة

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.



- f. 199 a  
المسيحيين على البر<sup>١</sup> فيلا فراط قوتك ايها المسيح القادر على  
كل شى فوجدوا حجرا عظيما منحوتا مثل الكنيسة ومهندما بصناعة  
عجيبة بحكمة الله المذهلة وفى وسطه هيكلا بهيا وهناك جسد  
القديس المكرم موضوعا منيرا وبقرب ذلك الحجر العظيم الثقيل  
ذلك الحبل الجافى المذكور فاراد كرنيليوس وفيفس بان يرفعا 5  
القديس فسمعا صوتا سماويا يقول لهم هكذا اتركوه حيث الرب  
العجيب دفنه فتركوه وبتلك القوة فهو الى الان فى كل سنة  
لاكرام وتذكار الشاهد فيرجع البحر الى خلف فى يوم تذكار  
القديس ويقف هكذا مدة سبعة ايام لكى ياتوا المومنين ويعيدوا  
لموسمه المقدس فلما سمعوا الجمع ذلك الصوت مجدوا الله وقبلوا 10  
جسد القديس فقط ورجعوا وهم فرحين وليس فى ذلك الوقت صار  
هذا العجب فقط وغيره من العجايب المذهلة لكن وفى كل سنة  
فى تذكار هذا القديس يهرب البحر الى خلف كما ذكرنا ويعطى  
للناس وقتا لكى يعيدوا الموسم القديس وصار وقتيذ عجائبا غير هذه  
كثيرة لان كل الذين يذهبون الى هناك ويكونوا بسو حال من 15  
الامراض ويشربون من ما ذلك البحر بحيث هيكل هذا القديس  
فيبرون من كافة اسقامهم وبعد ايام يسيرة فصاروا كل الذين  
يسكنون بقرب ذلك المكان مسيحيين لما عاينوا هذه العجايب  
المذهلة فلكن اسمعوا عجيبة اعظم من كل هذه العجايب وذلك  
بانه كان انسان مومن وله امانة عظيمة فى هذا القديس فذهب 20  
ليسجد للقديس فى هيكله هذا المذكور مع زوجته ورفقته وكان  
له ابن صغير وانهم لما قرب رجوعهم وقفوا فى هيكل هذا القديس  
يصلون ليمنح الله ولدهم حياة مديدة وغير ذلك ولما ازمع البحر  
بان يرجع الى مكانه هربوا والدين الصبي مع غيرهم من  
المسيحيين بحرص شديد لكيلا يغطاهم البحر ومن الخوف والقلق 25

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

f. 198 b  
 فللوقت خرج ما غزيرا هناك وصار نهرا عظيما وكان ما حلوا  
 لذيذا فاتناول القديس منها وشرب وكذلك كلهم شربوا فرحين ومن  
 اجل هذا العجب اكرموا اهل القرى الذين هناك للقديس وتورعوه  
 وكانوا يتبادروا اليه فى كل وقت وكانوا يسمعون حلاوة تعليمه  
 5 واسترجع منهم اقواما لا يُحصون الى حسن العبادة وعمدهم بسر  
 الثالوث المقدس وهدم هياكل الاصنام وابتنى لهم كنائس لانه فى  
 مدة سنة من مقامه هناك ابتنى القديس للذين امنوا خمسة وسبعين  
 كنيسة واحرق واتلف ساير الاصنام واهاد ساير اثاراتهم فلما علم  
 الملك ارسل الى الفديانون الوالى بان يحرس بكل وجه لكى  
 10 يبطل امانة المسيح وان الوالى عاقب هناك كثيرا من المسيحيين  
 باصناف التعذيب فلما نظر بان الجميع مشتاقين لكى يستشهدوا  
 لاجل المسيح وهم مستعدين لذلك وضع فى عقله بان يقتل  
 القديس الذى هو علة ذلك وانه اوقع بالمغبوط اكليمنطس  
 التعذيب الصعبة وعاقبه كثيرا فلما نظره بانه مشتاق الى الشهادة  
 15 بزيادة وهو يشدد المومنين ويوطدهم حكم عليه بالقتل وان يربطوا  
 فى عنقه جبل المركب الغليظ ويطرحوه فى عمق البحر لكيلا  
 يجدوا المومنين جسده المكرم فلما اطرحوه فى البحر وقف جمعا  
 جزيلا من المسيحيين بقرب البحر وهم نايمين وباكيين على  
 معلمهم وان كرنيليوس وفيفس تلميذه صرخا بحزن لا عزا له  
 20 وامروا البقية بان يصلوا الى الله كلهم مشاعا متضرعين اليه  
 بان يخرج جسد القديس الى الارض فلما صلوا كلهم معا  
 وهم باكيين صار عجا عظيما لان فى بعض الاوقات اكمل  
 موسى فى البحر الاحمر عجا مذهلا وهاهنا صار وكمل عجا  
 معجزا وذلك بان البحر هرب الى خلف عشرون ميلا وتقدموا

f. 198 a المروانه استحضره وامره بان يضحي للاصنام ولا يذهب الى هذا  
 المنفى وان القديس اراد بعذوبة الفاظه وحلاوتها بان يسترجع  
 الوالى الى الايمان بالمسيح فلما نظر الوالى عدم انقياد القديس  
 ودعه وهو متنهدا وباكيا قايلًا له الله الذى تعبدته هو يعينك على  
 هذا المنفى الصعب ثم انه اعدّ له ساير حوايجهم وارسله فى مركب 5  
 وعانقه وفبله واطلقه فاتبعوه كثيرين من الورعين الى المنفى  
 ووجد هناك عدة الفين من المسيحيين المظلومين المنفيين سابقا  
 وكانوا يقطعون هناك مرمرا وانهم لما نظروا القديس فرحوا جدا  
 وسجدوا له وقبلوا ايديه بورع واخبروه بمصائبهم وضيقاتهم وعدمهم  
 حتى وللشى الضرورى واشر من هذا كله فليس كان عندهم ما 10  
 لاجل عملهم وتعهم وكثرة شقاهم لكى يندى عطشهم فلكن كانوا  
 يذهبون ويجيبون الها من مكان بعيد مقداره خمسة واربعين  
 غلوة فتوجع القديس لاجلهم باكيا ثم عزاهم كثيرا قايلًا لهم بان  
 مشية الله كانت بان نفى وتشارك فى العقوبات والالام فلما قال  
 هكذا اوصاهم بان يعملوا جميعهم صلاة مشاعر معه متضرعين الى 15  
 الله القادر على كل شى لكى يعطيهم ما بها انه متحنن وعند  
 ما اكمل القديس صلاته نظر الى هاهنا وهنا وانه نظر من بعيد  
 خروفا يرفع رجله اليمين ويوضح الارض التى قدامه والخروف فلم  
 ينظره احدا غير القديس وانه ذهب مع ثلاثة اناس وقال لهم حفروا  
 هذا المكان الذى كان واقفا فيه الخروف فلما عملوا حفرة 20  
 صغيرة اتناول البار الفاس بيده وحفر به يسيرا وقال هكذا بسر سيدنا  
 يسوع المسيح يخرج فى هذا الموضع ما حلوا عذبا فلما قال  
 هكذا يا لعجايبك ايها المسيح الملك القادر على كل شى

f. 197 b يتحنن علي وان الامراة لما سمعت ذلك فرحت وبكيت وانها  
 للوقت اخبرت البار بذلك فاسرع للوقت وجا الى بيت سمينيوس  
 وانه اقتبله بتواضع كثير وسقط على قدميه باكيا بحرارة وقال له  
 بقلب منسحق اشكر الاله الحقيقي ولقدسك لانك اعميت حدقتي  
 5 الحسيات وانرت نفسى لكى اعرف الحق واهرب من<sup>١</sup> ضلالة اليونانيين  
 وكذبهم لانى من كل قلبى اقتبلت الانذار بالامانة الحسنة  
 وكان حينئذ عيد الفصح فصار وقتئذ فى ذلك البيت عيدا عظيما  
 وعمد سمينيوس وكل اهله ومحبيه وعبيده من الرجال والنسا  
 وكانت عدتهم اربعمائة وثلاثة وعشرون انسان وكان منهم اقواما  
 10 كثيرين من محبى الملك ومعارفه فلما عاين ذلك بوبليوس  
 القويص الكللى شره بان الامانة وقتئذ تنمو وتزيد وضع فى عقله  
 بان يقتل القديس الذى هو علة هذه الاشيا وانه دفع الى اقوام فضة  
 وتوافق معهم بان يعملون سجنس مع والى المدينة ويقرفوا القديس  
 قدامه ليحركوه على قتلة سريعا فاتوا هولاء للوالى وقرفوا القديس  
 15 بانه<sup>٢</sup> مضل وساحر وانه يجدف على الالهة وقلع هياكلهم من  
 الاساسات ويسجد لاله جديد وابتنى له فى كل مكان كنائس  
 ومذابح ثم ان الذين لم ياخذوا رشوة مدحوا القديس قدام والى  
 مخبرين بعجايبه والاحسانات التى يفعلها مع كل المدينة فلما  
 انظر والى كثرة محاورة الشعب وقلقهم دعا للقديس فى السر  
 20 وامتنحه بتمليقات كثيرة لكى يرجع الى<sup>٣</sup> ضلالتة ولما رآه جلدا  
 شهما وغير متقلقا اورد خبره قدام طراييانوس الملك قايلا له بان  
 سجسا عظيما صائرا فى المدينة من اجل اكليمنطس وان الملك  
 حتر عليه بان ينفوه الى مدينة مقفرة هى فى حدود شرسونة وان  
 والى حزنه على القديس لاجل انه مزومع ان يذهب الى هذا المنفى

<sup>١</sup> Sic in Cod.<sup>٢</sup> Cod. ظلالته<sup>٣</sup> Cod. مظل



f. 197 a  
 لكى يفتح ويغلق لمن يريد فانت افتح عيني واذننى هذا الرجل  
 لانك اوعدتنا بان تعطينا بصلاحك ساير مطلوباتنا فلما صلى  
 القديس هكذا من اجل المريض فللوقت شفى من عماه الحسى  
 وسمع باذنيه الحسية فلكن نفسه لبثت ايضا فى <sup>١</sup> الضلالة القديمة  
 وكان يتوهم بان القديس ساحر ويعمل هذه الاشيا باسحاره وعمية <sup>٥</sup>  
 بصيرة الشقى كمثل الاول <sup>٢</sup> بالضلالة وان الغير شكور اوصا خدامه  
 بان يمسكوا القديس وقتئذ ويربطوه ليجازيه عوض النعمة بضدها  
 وان الخدام مسكوا خشبا وحجارة ظانين بانهم القديس وربطوهم  
 لانهم توسسوا من المجازاة الالهية وان سيسينيوس توهم بان  
 عبيده قد ربطوا القديس فافتخر عليه قايلا له هكذا انا ابطل يا <sup>١٠</sup>  
 اكليمنطس اسحارك وطغيانك سريعا لكى تتادب وان القديس كان  
 محفوظا بغير رباط وتقدم وقال له هكذا يا عديم العقل لقد  
 عمى قلبك ايها الشقى فلا تتوهم بان تربطنى انا فلكن اربط  
 الهتك الذين تسجد لهم منذ الاول وتركه محتقرا مرذولا ثم ان  
 القديس بارك ثاودورة واوصاها لكى تصلى الى الله بغير فتور من <sup>١٥</sup>  
 اجل رجلها لكى يرجع الى حسن العبادة وانها كانت تصلى  
 متضرعة الى الله بدموع من اجله فظهر لها عند المسا انسان  
 لحيته بيضا موقرا بشبه بطرس الرسول وقال لها لاجلك اشفيت  
 رجلك لكيما يتقدس الرجل من الامراة كما اوصى اخى بولص  
 الرسول ولما قال لها هكذا غاب للوقت وان سيسينيوس بفعل <sup>٢٠</sup>  
 النعمة الالهية دعا زوجته وقال لها انا قد امنت بسيدى  
 يسوع المسيح الاله الحقيقى وحده الذى تضرعت اليه انا  
 ليغفر لى جهالاتى القديمة وثانيا فاننى اتشفع لى عند القديس  
 اكليمنطس بان لا يحقد علي انا الغير شكور وبما انه تلميذ لله

<sup>١</sup> Cod. الضلالة<sup>٢</sup> Cod. بالضلالة

واحدًا منهم اسمه سيسينيوس كان يخبر نارن الملك كثيرًا فهذا f. 196 b  
 كان يبغضه واخبر للملك عن ذاته بان اكليمينطس استرجع  
 زوجته ثاودرة من عبادة الاصنام وانها ليس هي الان مهتمة في  
 بيتها واولادها لكن في كل وقت تذهب الى كنيسة المسيحيين  
 5 لتتعلم تعاليمهم وكانت هذه البغضة في قلب سيسينيوس وكان  
 متسلحًا في كل يوم بسلاح الظلم والغيرة والحسد المكن في  
 قلبه على القديس وكان يدرس على زوجته ثاودرة بالسو اذا وجد  
 وقتًا موافقًا وفي بعض الايام تخابث وكان مجمع المسيحيين  
 وانه ذهب واختفى في الكنيسة مع عبيده لينظر ماذا تفعل زوجته  
 10 هناك وعند حصوله في الكنيسة فكان القديس وقتئذ يصلي للولوت  
 لبث سيسينيوس<sup>1</sup> اعما واطرشا وانه قال لعبيده خذوني واقتادوني  
 لكي اذهب الى بيتي لانه قد دهمني العما والطرش على غفلة  
 وهوذا لست انظر ولا اسمع بالجملة وان العبيد اقتادوه بيده وارادوا  
 بان يخرجوا فيه من الكنيسة فلم يقدروا فلكن كانوا يدوروا  
 15 هاهنا وهناك بغير منفعة لان القوة الالهية منعتهم ليتادب ذلك العديم  
 العقل ويتعنف وان ثاودرة لما نظرت هكذا سالت عن علته  
 فاخبروها بامرهم وانها تضرعت الى الرب بدموع لكي يسمح له  
 بالخروج وهكذا صار فجابوه عبيده الى بيته ووضعوه في الفراش  
 وهو اعشى واطرش بفعل الله فلما رجعت ثاودرة الى بيتها  
 20 فاخبروها بامرهم على الاستقصا وانها حزنت وتردبت له وذهبت  
 ووقعت على قدمي القديس وهي متضرعة بدموع لكي يشفي  
 رجلها وان اكليمينطس ذهب الى بيت المريض ويبكى عليه  
 وتضرع الى الله مصليا من اجله وقايلا ايها الرب يسوع  
 المسيح يا من اعطيت مفاتيح ملكوتك لرسولك بطرس

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

f. 196 a لخلافة كرسية لانه شابه معلمه فى الفضائل بالعادات الحسنة  
والجهادات وباقى الفضائل وكان معلما لليهود والحنفا وصار مع  
الكل كالكل لكيما يربح الكافة لينتصبوا فى حسن العبادة للمسيح  
وكان متواضعا جدا حلوا فى خطابه ووعظه حتى ان اليونانيين  
واليهود كان لهم فيه محبة عظيمة وورعا لاجل انه لم يكن 5  
يوجع بانتهاز وتوحش ولكن بتواضع كثير ووداعة موضعا لهم  
الشهادات من كتبهم ليكون قوله مستحقا لتصديقه ولم يكن يشتم  
احد منهم ولا يرفضهم بالجملة وكان يوضح للعادمين العقل عن  
اصنامهم واحدا فواحدا كيف كانوا ومن هم ويوضح لهم حقريتهم  
ولا جل اى علم توهمهم الهة وكان فى اخر وعظه يكرز دائما 10  
بكثرة تحنن الله الحقيقى وغبارة رحمته ويحركهم الى التوبة  
ويوعدهم بان ملكوة السما مفتوحة للراجعين منهم وذلك بان يكفوا  
عن خطاياهم الاولى فقط ويؤمنوا بالمسيح ويعتمدوا فان الله يقبلهم  
واما اليهود فكان يمدحهم فى اول كلامه قايلا بانهم شعبا لله  
منتخبا بما انهم من جنس ابراهيم وما شابه ذلك من المدايح وفى 15  
الاخر فكان يكرم العهد الجديد ولا يحتقر العتيقة حتى لا يشكون  
فلكن كان يتمم قوله بالحكمة وهكذا عمل مع كثيرين منافعا  
كثيرة مهتديا بكلامه ومقتاد كل احد الى حسن العبادة وكان  
ايضا مهتما بتدبير المسيحيين دائما معتنق امور المساكين لكيلا  
يعوزهم شيا من ضروريات الجسد الذين هم من الرجال والنسا 20  
الارامل واليتامى الذين فى المدينة وكتبهم كلهم فى دفتر  
وكان يعطى لكل احد منهم صدقة بقدر ما ينبغي لى  
يدبر معيشته فهكذا عمل المتحنن اكليمينطس المشابه برحمة  
للمسيح وكانوا ساير حاشية الملك يكرمونه ويوقروه ما خلا

بطرس هكذا سقطت انا على قدميه معتفيا من الرئاسة وانه f. 195 b  
قال لى لا تضاد يا ابنى مشية الله والتفت نحو الشعب واصاهم  
كلهم لكى يستسهبوا بالامانة بكل طهارة وبغير عيب وان يحب  
احدهم للاخر وان عرض لاحدهم مع الاخر شكاً او قلقا فيعمل  
5 معه محبة قبل ان تغيب الشمس ولا يدينوا احد ولكن يصفحوا  
لمن اخطى اليهم لكى الله يغفر ويصفح لهم عن خطاياهم  
ثم اوصى لجميعهم ايضا بان يكون لهم في انا ورعا عظيما كمثلى  
الورع الذى كان لهم فيه فلما وعظهم بهذه المواعظ واكثر منها  
جلس فى الكرسى وقال لى اتضرع اليك بان تكتب الى يعقوب اخا  
10 الرب بعد مماتى وخروجى من الحياة كل الذى جرى عليك  
منذ صغر سنك وماذا صار علينا فى اسفارنا الى اليوم وانصرافى انا  
وكمال شهادتى وكيف امجد الله بموتى مصلوباً كما فاضنى  
الرب لانه اذا سمع هذا يريد يناله سرورا عظيما وسلوة واما انا  
اكليمنطس فلكى اخالف وصية معلمى بطرس كتبت اليك يا  
15 سيدى يعقوب وارسلت اليك باختصار كل ذلك الذى جرى عليّ  
وصلى انت من اجلى الى الرب لكى يوهلنى انا الغير مستحق  
بان ارعى ما قد ائمنت عليه رعاية مرضية لله وان اتمم حياتى بالشهادة

حبر شهادة القديس اكليمينطس

الى هاهنا هى رسالة هذا المخطوط اكليمينطس التى كتبها بيده  
20 الى الرسول يعقوب التى منها يقدر بان يظهر كل احد كثرة  
محبه للرب وغيرةه للامانة الحسنة لكى بالاكثريه يعرف من نهاية هذا  
المخطوط بالشهادة لانه اصطبهر عليها المثلث الفبطه بشهادة لكى يمجّد  
الرب ويثمد الامانة الحسنة بها حسنا بطرس ومستحقا



f. 195 a وتركا<sup>١</sup> الحاضرات وورثوا السماويات فاما انا واخوتى فاننا لم  
 نفصل من معلنا بطرس بالجُملة فلكن كنا معه دايمًا فى طاعته  
 واسفاره واحتملنا معه كل احزان وعقوبات مختلفة اصطبرنا عليها  
 من الكفار الذين فى المُدن والقرى لما ذهبنا لنكرز بالانجيل  
 وفى الآخر انتهبنا الى رومية المشهورة واكرز فيها بطرس بمجاهرة 5  
 بالمسيح وصنع عجائبا كثيرة واسترجع كثيرين الى الامانة وعمدهم  
 وليس من الادنيا فقط فلكن اغنيا كثيرين ونسوة من بيت  
 الملك الذين كانت منهم مطرونة الحسبية الا ان الرسول بطرس  
 لما ازمع بان يذهب الى عند المسيح معلنا ابصر منظرا الالهيا  
 بانه بعد ايام يسيرة يريد يُصلب لكى يصير شريكا لالام سيدة 10  
 وانه جمع كل الاخوة وانتصب فى وسط الكنيسة وضبط يدي  
 وقال هكذا للجمع تكونوا تعرفوا هذا يا اخوتى واولادى بانى قد  
 وصلت الى نهاية حياتى بحسبما اظهر لى سيدى المسيح وهوذا  
 انا اشرفن عليكم هذا تلميذى اكليمنطس اسقفا وهو الذى  
 اوثقتة على كرسى راعيا لكم من اليوم لانه شاركنى فى كل 15  
 امتحاناتى واحزائى الذى صابرها وانا عارفا به بانه عابد الله  
 المحب البشر ونقيا وعفيفا وصالحا وصديقا وطويل الاناة ويصبر  
 على الاحزان وسائر الاشيا المضادة التى توافى اليه ولاجل هذا  
 امنحه سلطان لكى يحل ويربط كلما ينبغى لانه عارفا بقوانين  
 الكنيسة جيدا جدا فيجب عليكم كلكم بان تخضعوا له 20  
 لان كل من يمرمر الرئيس الحقانى فانه يسخط الله ويرث موت  
 المخالفين وعقوباتهم ويجب ايضا على المتقدم بان يشابه  
 الطبيب الحقانى ولا يتسخط ويحتد بعدم معرفة فلما قال

<sup>١</sup> Cod. الحاضرات.

عظيم بما انه نذيرا بالحق ورسولا لله وكان يصلى ويضع يده f. 194 b  
 اليمين على المرضى ويشفيهم كلهم وعلم شعبا جزيلا بان يؤمنوا  
 بالاله المثلث بالاقانيم ووطد الامانة الحنة ثم ان ابى سقط على  
 قدمى بطرس متضرعا اليه لكى يعمله مسيحيا ويتممه بالمعمودية  
 5 المقدسة لكى يرجع الى صورته الاولى ويتناول الاسرار الالهية وان  
 بطرس اوصاه بان يبكى ويصوم الى الغد وفى اليوم الثانى وعظه  
 ولكثيرين غيره جدا وعلمهم بان يستيروا بالامانة المستقيمة بلا عيب  
 وعمدهم بسم الاب والابن وروح القدس وبعد ذلك اقام هناك ايلما  
 كثيرة يعلم الانطاكيين وقاسينا كلنا شدايدا كثيرة من الشيطان  
 10 عدو الحق ولما سمع الوالى باننا نحن من جنس قيصر الملك فارسل  
 اخبر الملك طيباريوس بذلك وان الملك لما علم بهذا ارسل يقول  
 له بان يرسل والدى ووالدتى الى رومية سريعا وان الوالى منحهم  
 عطايا عظيمة واكرمهم كثيرا وارسلهم وان الملك لما نظر والدى  
 ووالدتى بكى كثيرا من زيادة ابتهاجه ووقع على اعناقهما مقابلا  
 15 اياهما وقال هكذا لسائر اراكانته افرحوا اليوم كلكم معى واهلوا  
 لنعمل عبدا مشاعا لوجودنا فافسطس وماطيديان لاننا توهمناهم  
 اموات فقاموا<sup>1</sup> وصالين ووجدوا وعمل لهم مايدة عظيمة واكمل  
 معهم ثم اوهبهم ذهبا كثيرا وعبيدا وجوارا وغير ذلك من المواهب  
 الجليلة لاجل شرف جنسهم ليستسيروا كحسب عادتهم الاولى  
 20 وانهما اتعرفا فى رومية بالفضائل وحسن العبادة<sup>2</sup> حايطين امانة  
 المسيح غير منزوعة واخبرا قسموا على الساكنين سائر متاعهم  
 واتقنوا كافة الصالحات واكملا حياتهما فيما يرضى الله

<sup>1</sup> Cod. وظاللين<sup>2</sup> Cod. حاوطين

- f. 194 a  
 وهم الان كلهم مستعدين لكى يتمموا قول سيمن فلما سمع بطرس  
 ذلك ارسل والدى مع اخوتى الاثنين ووالدتى واقوام غيرهم لكى  
 يذهبوا الى انطاكية قايلاً لوالدى اذهب يا فافسطس الان الى  
 انطاكية واطهر صورة سيمن واكرز للشعب كمن فيه لكى يعرفوا  
 الحق ويؤمنوا بان الله واحدا هو على الحقيقة وابدى وما شابه  
 ذلك وان والدى ذهب الى انطاكية بفرح كحسب وصية بطرس  
 له وانتصب فى وسط المدينة وهتف هكذا لتكونوا تعرفوا يا اهل  
 انطاكية باننا قد ظلمنا بطرس لما قرفناه لان ذلك الانسان قديسا  
 Recog. x. 60  
 Hom. xx. 18, 19  
 Recog. x. 66  
 وانا فقد تجنيت عليه بالباطل فلكن الان اتضرع اليكم بان تقبلوه  
 اذا جا وتؤمنوا وتصدقوا بتعليمه لاجل انه رسول الله الحقيقى  
 الغير كاذب واعملوا جميع ما يامركم به واذا لم تعملون هكذا  
 به فانه يهلككم كلكم ولمدينتكم معا وانا لاجل هذا الامر اتيت  
 الى عندكم لاعطيكم خبر لكيلا تصنعون به شرا لانى انا فى الليلة  
 الماضية ظهروا لى ملايكة وضربونى كمثل كافر وباغض الانذار  
 15 بالحق فاتضرع اليكم بهذا واعلموا ايضا بانى انا قد كنت جيت الى  
 عندكم غير دفعة واطغيتكم من فعل الشيطان وتكلمت على بطرس  
 قولا رديا فلا تصدقونى وانا اليوم اعترف قدامكم بمجاهرة بانى  
 انا طاغى وساحر فلكنى الان قد رجعت الى التوبة مترجيا بان الله  
 يغفر خطاياى فلما قال هكذا والدى للانطاكيين عن وجه سيمن  
 20 وبارك بطرس ومدحه فللوقت احوال عزم كل الانطاكيين الذين كانوا  
 يبغيضوا الرسول قديما وجعلهم ان يحبوه وان والدى ارسل الينا خبر  
 بان نذهب الى هناك لكى يتمتع بحلاوة وعظ بطرس وانى انا للوقت  
 ذهبت مع بطرس وسائر رفقتنا وان كل الانطاكيين قبلوه بفرح  
 Recog. x. 68  
 Hom. xx. 23

f. 103 b  
Noy. 18. 37

11. 11. 1

11. 11. 1

11. 11. 1

باني وجدت والدي رجلها وانها خرجت وهي تصرخ وتبكي وتفتش  
عليه فلما عرفتة فمن كثرة فرحها اقامت ساعات كثيرة صامتة  
كالميت ثم احضرنا نحن الاولاد الثلاثة وسجدنا لابيها وقلنا له باننا  
نحن اولادك وصار لنا كلنا في ذلك اليوم فرحا لا يوصف وشكرنا  
5 الله القادر على كل شئ الذي اهلنا بان يجمع احدا بالآخر وبعد  
ذلك اتجامل بطرس مع ابي ووعظه لكي يؤمن بالمسيح وانها بان  
لا يقول ذلك الهذين الذي قاله اولا ولكي يؤمن بان الله حقا  
هو وبكلمة حكمته سبق ودبر بان تجرى عليكم هذه المصائب وينكسر  
المركب ويفترق احدكم من الآخر لكي بعد هذه الاحزان التي  
10 همتمكم تجتمعوا ايضا وتستنبوا بالامانة الحقيقية واخر الدال بوعظه  
كثير وتعليم واضح عرف والدي الحق وتقدم الى حسن العبادة  
ولما امن بالمسيح واعتمد فامتلئ غيرة الالهة واخذ من بطرس  
صفحا وذهب ليتجامل مع سيمن الساحر لانه كان وقتئذ في  
اتطافكة ولما نظر سيمن بان والدي قد وجه قدام الشعب فبشاش  
15 وساحر احتاض الطومر وبدأ يتشاكل ويظهر حيلاته الشيطانية وان  
والدي ايضا بدأ يتشاكل ويتصنع ويحبل لانه كان سيمن الساحر  
ثم ان الكاهن سيمن عمل لثمنه مثل لثام والدي لاجل ان الجاهل  
كان قد لول ليجتاز من رومية ليستلوا سيمن ونجبوه من رومية  
الى رومية بما انه 'ممثل' وساحر وقصود فحسب انشطته وان  
الفتش لكي يبيح من هذه الثمنه لثام بضمير الذي الذي فتنه  
عوض سيمن ولما سيمن كان هرب في بلد امسكية وجاز عام  
20 بعد ذلك لما التي ولدتا من امسكية في عهد مطرنة  
ممثل سيمن ففجعتا ثم ان بطرس مع من لا يحفظهما



- ١٩٣ أ  
Hom. XIV. 3
- ٥ بان يصيب الانسان خيرا او شرا يحظى به ان صلى واذا لم يصلى كما اعرف انا عملى لانى انا كنت موسرا جدا وذو حسب وكنت اجود على الفقرا بصدقات كثيرة لكى يعينونى الالهة ولكيلا يصيبنى حزن من احد من الاشيا المزمعة ان تجرى على فلكن لم يقتدروا الالهة بان يحفظونى بغير مصاب هذه واكثر منها قالها ٥
- الشيخ لبطرس واما بطرس فكان يعاند قوله واظهر له الحق قايلا بانه قد يوجد الالهة واحدا فقط وهو غير مايت وهو الذى سبق ودبر كافة الاشيا بحكمته العادلة وبعضها بمسامحة منه وبعد ذلك ساله بطرس بان يقول له من اين هو وماذا اصابه وجرى عليه
- ١٥ من البلايا فاجابه قايلا انا كنت من اكابر رومية عارفا بصناعة التنجيم جدا وكنت متزوج بامرأة قد كانت من جنس قيصر الملك واولدت منها ثلاثة اولاد وكان مكتوب لها فى حظها بان
- Recog. IX. 32
- Hom. XIV. 6
- تصير فاسقة لانها احبت واحد من عبيدها ولما لم تقدر ان تصبر على دينونة الناس لها فهربت معه الى غير بلد واخذت معها
- Hom. XIV. 7
- ١٥ الولدين الكبار وابقت الولد الصغير عندي واتزوجت هى بذلك العبد وهكذا ماتت مع ولديها واما ابني الصغير فلبث فى بيتى واخيرا ذهبت انا لاطلب الامراة وولديها فضاع ايضا ابني الصغير وهما انا دايرا من مكان الى مكان ولست اقدر اعاود الى موطنى لاجل
- خجلى وانا الان بتعب عظيم وعذاب احصل طعامى فلما سمع بطرس ذلك عرف بان الشيخ هو والدى بالحقيقة وساله عن اسمه ٢٥
- Hom. XIV. 8
- وعن اسم زوجته واولاده فاجابه بان اسمى فافسطس وزوجتى ماطيديا واولادى فافستينوس وفافستينيانوس والصغير كليمنس فحينئذ
- ٩
- Hom. XIV. 9
- بكيت انا وبطرس وعند ذلك ذهبت الى عند امى وبشرتها

وتوفيت كفن بقرية مركب فيه كسوس ايسر فخطونا ميمر في  
 مركبهم وكنوا به في قيسية قيس وعيونا كسيتا وسكنوا فاستوت  
 لمرور عليه وبقية جد تسي ليوط ونحتا كثير اوكلاه لخصمون  
 ولدتا بكافة غور كيونتين ونا كيون تقيما ايضا لقصبة على  
 5 نوط ونظر لاسر على عتاهم في لاسمة لسة وكنا مشكورين  
 بلن تطر عثر لاسمنا ولينطلات وبعد هذا لقصنا مع اسلى يدعى  
 سيمن لانه توهر بلن بطقتا على حسب عزمه لاسر فكن من  
 10 قل الله لاصطحا مع ونحد من تلاميذ المسيح يدعى وكنا وانه  
 علمنا بلن ترك سيمن وقتلتا في رسول الرب بطرس وانه وعظنا  
 وعمدنا وهكذا نحن نطلب من الله بلن يهلك وقت للمعمودية  
 المقدمة فلما لعبنا بهنا عتقا ولعتى يكون بدموع غزيرة ولتحتاج  
 15 وحينئذ طلبت اما من الرسول بطرس بلن اتل المعمودية المقدمة  
 وانه لوصلنى بلن اصوم ايضا مدة ايام مجلدين بالصوم واتنا تضرعا  
 اليه لكى يعمدنا لاننا كنا من حين دخلنا الى المركب لم ناكل  
 20 شيا وهكذا شهدت ولعتى وتضرعا ايضا لكى يعمدنا لتاكل معنا  
 خبزا لتفرح بالروح لانى لنا غير معتمد ولم ناكل في مايدة  
 واحدة بالجملة ولن بطرس لكىلا يخطى قدام الله بها انه قدس  
 ولكى يعمل ايضا شهورنا امرا بلن نصور كل ذلك اليوم معه وفى  
 اليوم المقبل لكى نستحق للمعمودية المقدمة وهكذا صنع وبعد  
 25 عملانا اتناول بطرس خبزا وبارك وقدس الخبز وكسره وناوله لوالدتى  
 اولا ونحن بعد ذلك واكلنا فرحين وممجدين لله ومن بعد ذلك اتانا  
 واحد شيخ وقال هكنا لبطرس لا تطفى يا انسان ولا تصلى فان ليس  
 لله وجود ولا تدبير اله فلكن نصيب كل انسان فقط وكلها هو مزعم

- f. 192 a  
اولا ان اذهب وانال من رفيقتي صفحا لانها قبلتني من اجل الرب  
واعالتني على حسب مقدرتها لما كانت هذه الفقيرة في عافيتها  
والان فهي مطروحة مخلعة فتعجب بطرس من حسن عزم والدتي  
وامر<sup>١</sup> فاحضروا قدامه المخلعة وانه قال لها هكذا بمسمع الكل ان  
كنت انا اكرز بالحق فانفضي معافاة لكي يومنوا هولاء<sup>٢</sup> الحاضرين 5  
بان الله الواحد خلق العلم كله<sup>٣</sup> فياله من عجب للوقت نهضت  
المخلعة وصارت معافاة بجميلتها وسجدت للطبيب وشكرت من احسانه  
كما ينبغي فلما نظرت والدتي ذلك العجب تعجبت هي وسائر  
الحاضرين وتضرعت الى بطرس بان يشفيها ايضا وان بطرس وضع  
يده عليها فشفيت للوقت فحينئذ شكرت والدتي من الرسول واني 10  
انا دفعت للمتقدم في الجزيرة الف درهم من الفضة لاجل انهم  
اقتبلوا والدتي عندهم وامرته بان يفرقها صدقة لاجل محبتي على  
الفقرا والمستحقين واننا سرنا مع والدتي بعد الذي عهد بطرس  
الامراة التي اقتبلتها وغيرها وكل الذين امنوا بتعليم الرسول وذهبنا  
من هناك طايفين من بلد الى غيره الى ان بلغنا الى لادقية 15  
وهناك استقبلونا اكيلا ونيقيطا وقبلونا كما ينبغي لضايفين الغربا  
وان بطرس لما نظر عظم تلك المدينة وكثرة اهلها عزم بان يقيم  
هناك اياما كثيرة لكي يكرز بقول الايمان وحينئذ نيقيطا واكيلا  
سالوني من اجل والدتي قايلين من هي هذه الامراة ومن اين  
رافقتكم وان بطرس اخبرهم بقصتها من اولها الى اخرها فلما سمعا قوله 20  
لبثا منذهلين ساعات عدة وبعد ذلك صرخا هكذا بدموع قايلين نحن  
هم اولادها فافستينوس وفافستينيانوس اخوة اكليمنطس ثم انهما اخبرا  
قدام والدتهما بكلمة جرى عليهما مع النوتية قايلين بان انكسر مركبنا  
Recog. VII. 24  
Hom. XII. 24  
Recog. VII. 25  
Hom. XIII. 1  
Recog. VII. 26,  
27  
Hom. XIII. 2  
Recog. VII. 28  
Hom. XIII. 3  
Recog. VII. 32

<sup>1</sup> Cod. فاحفظروا

<sup>2</sup> Cod. الحاضرين

<sup>3</sup> Sic in Cod.



f. 191 b  
Recog. VII. 17  
Hom. XII. 17

فانى تمسكت بدفة وبها وصلت الى البر وكنت ارتعد وكان  
نصفى مايتا ولما صار النهار فتشت على اولادى فلم اجدهم فاتوا  
اقوام فلاحين فوجدونى عربانة فكسونى وعزونى وجابونى الى هذه  
القرية واخذتنى امراة ارملة فقيرة الى بيتها وكانت فى كل  
5 يوم تعزىنى قايلة بان رجلا كان نوتيا وغرق فى البحر وانا فمن  
كثرة حزنى وارتعاد يداى كنت اضبط بهدى عصاة ومن هذه

Recog. VII. 18  
Hom. XII. 18

الجهة توسوست وهذه الامراة التى قبلتنى فهى فى امراض عظيمة  
وهى ملقاة طريحة فى منزلها لم تقدر ان تتحرك وليس لنا شيا  
نعيش منه غير من صدقة يسيرة يعطونا اياها الناس ونحن

Hom. XII. 19

10 مستسيرين بضيقة عظيمة معا فلما سمع بطرس كلامها عرف بانها  
والدتى فسألها قايلة وماذا كان يدعى رجلك ولديكى وما هى  
اسماؤهم فقالت له اما رجلي فكان يدعى فانطس واما اولادى فهم  
فانستينوس وفانستينانوس والصغير يدعى اكليمينطس وتممت خبرها

Hom. XII. 20

فقال لها بطرس بهدى الله ايتها الامراة لانك فى هذا اليوم تنظرين  
15 ولدك واولادها بان لا تعمل قلقا الى ان نخرج من الجزيرة ثم

Recog. VII. 21  
Hom. XII. 21

مسك بيدها وجابها الى المركب ولما نظرت انا بطرس كيف  
يقتاد الامراة تبعت ولم اعلم العلة فذهبت انا لاستقبله واعمل له  
الكروم واضبط يده وان بطرس قال لها هذا هو اكليمينطس وانها  
عانتنى وقبلتنى وهى باكية ولما انا غانى غضبت لاجل انى

Recog. VII. 22  
Hom. XII. 22

20 لم اعلم السبب فقال لى بطرس اتراد املك لتمتع فبك فلما  
سمعت انا ذلك بكيت وسقطت اقبل قدميها وان كل الحاضرين  
تعجبوا منى باتى كيف انا غنى ومنطقتى وولد انا من معلمي  
ووالدتى فهى فى فقر هكذا مقادله وانا ايتها بلان نذهب

من تلك الجزيرة فقال بطرس لوالدتى لكى تدخل الى  
25 المركب تسير معنا فلما سمع الصرخ اليك يا سيدى بان تدعنى

الحاضرين Cod.

Sic in Cod.



- والان لى مدة عشرون سنة لم اسمع عنه خبر فلما سمع بطرس ذلك  
 بدا يبكى كالمترثى وقال للذين هم معنا فى المركب اعلّموا يا احباى  
 بان اذا اصاب المومنين احزان وعقوبات فيصبروا عليها عارفين بان  
 لاجلها يستوجبون غفران خطاياهم ويحفظون بالفرح الابدى لاجل  
 حزنهم<sup>١</sup> الحاضر فلكن الحنفا الاشقىا فيكابدون وهاهنا العقاب وبعد 5  
 الموت ايضا يُعاقبون لاجل كفرهم بالعذاب الذى لا نهاية له فلما  
 خاطبنا بهذا بطرس نظرنا قدامنا جزيرة تُدعى ارواد وان القوار من  
 اهلها تضرعوا الى بطرس بان يدخل اليها لاجل نياح يسير وانه  
 اطاعهم وكان ذلك من تدبير الله لكى اجد هناك ولدتى ولما خرجنا  
 الى الجزيرة ذهب كل واحد الى حيث يريد وان بطرس بهداية الله 10  
 طاف طرقات كثيرة فالتفته امرأة مسكينة وطلبت منه صدقة فقال  
 لها لماذا يا امرأة لا تعملين بيديكى وتقتاتين من تعبك فلكن  
 تطلبى طعامك من الغير فاجابته انا بالشكل لى يدين يا سيدى  
 ولكنهما محلولات ولا فعل لهما ولست اقدر اعمل بهما خدمة  
 بالكلية ثم بكيت وتنهدت عظيما وان بطرس توجع لها مترثيا لبكاها 15  
 وتضرع اليها بان تخبره بمصاها وحزنها فقالت له بانى انا من  
 جنس عظيم فى رومية وكان لى رجل جليل القدر وثلاثة اولاد  
 ذكور وان اخو زوجى لما نظر حسنى اراد بان يفصحنى بالزنا  
 وانا فكان لى شوق عظيم الى العفة بها انه شيا مكرم وانى هربت  
 من بلدى لكى لا يعلم رجلى بهذا الامر فيقتلنى ولاخوه معا 20  
 واكون انا السبب وهكذا انا كذبت على رجلى بانى رايت منام  
 بان اسافر مع اولادى الاثنين ليلا نموت كلنا وانه ارسلنا الى اثينا  
 لكى يتعلموا اولادنا الدرس فى الكتب ولما سرنا فى البحر حدث  
 علينا فى اخر الليالى اضطراب عظيم فى البحر فانكسر مركبنا  
 واختنق كل من كان فيه ما خلا انا الشقية السخط 25

f. 191 a  
 Recog. VII. 11  
 Hom. XII. 11

Recog. VII. 12  
 Hom. XII. 12

Recog. VII. 13  
 Hom. XII. 13

Recog. VII. 15  
 Hom. XII. 15

Recog. VII. 16  
 Hom. XII. 16

<sup>1</sup> Cod. الحاضر

f. 190a  
Kenyg. VII, 6  
Honn. XII, 6

الى مواكل مختلفة فلكن الى خبز وزيت فقط ويقول في بعض  
الافاق ولم اقتنى كما ترانى ثواب ثابته لان كل على في  
الخيرات الصالحة التى لاجلها كل خير احتقر من كل لى  
الحاضرات وبالاخرى لانى انا ولدت من اناس ادنيا ولد ربها  
5 يتامى وفقر انا واخى اندراوس ولم يكن لنا قنية كثيرة فلجل  
ذلك اعتدت على المسكنه صابرا على الضيقات فى السفر وعلى شهر

Kenyg. VII, 8  
Honn. XII, 8

ذلك من شقا الجسد وبعد ما فاوضنى هكذا سالى عن والدى  
ماذا يقال لهر وماذا يدعون وامرنى بان اخبره عن جنسهم واسماوهم  
على التحرير وانى خاطبته على الحقيقة بذلك قايلا بان والدى  
يدعى فافسطس وهو المتقدم فى اهل رومية ولاجل ذلك دفع اليه  
10 قيصر الملك امرأة من جنسه تدعى ماطينديا واولد منها ولدين  
توم ودعا اسماوهما فافستينون وفافستينانون وبعدهم اولدلى انا الا  
انى لم اعرف والدتى بالجملة لانها بعد ما ولدتنى بمدة اخيرا  
نظرت والدتى منلما كما اخبرنى بذلك ابى بانها اذا لم تذهب مع

Kenyg. VII, 9

15 ولديها التوم الى غير بلد فاننا نموت كلنا وان والدى وضع امى

Honn. XII, 9

مع ولديها فى مركب واعطاهم مال كثير وجوار وعبيد وغير ذلك  
من الاشيا الضرورية وارسلهم الى اثينا لكى يتعلمون الاولاد الثانية  
ومسكنى انا عنده فقط ليتسلى بى وبعد سنة ارسل الى والدتى  
مع انا فضة المنفقة الى اثينا ولن اولايك ايضا لم يرجعوا ولى  
20 السنة الثالثة ارسل اخيرين واتهم عاودوا اليه فى السنة الرابعة وقالوا

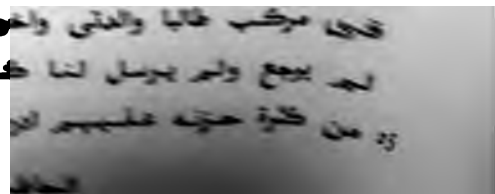
Kenyg. VII, 10

له باتهم لم يرجعوا لى ولا اخوتى ورفقتهم وان والدتى حزن

Honn. XII, 10

كثيرا وانه وضع مكانه وحلا وتوحى رومية والجميع وتصدر

فى مركب غالبا والدتى واخوتى ومن معهم ومن ذلك الوقت  
لم يرجع ولم يرسل لنا كتاب بالجملة ولى طنت به  
30 من كثرة حزنه عليهم لى



- f. 192 b  
Hom. XIII. 7 وللوقت كان بقربنا مركب فيه لصوص البحر فاخذونا معهم فى  
مركبهم وذهبوا بنا الى قيسارية فيلبس وغيروا اسامينا وباعونا فاشتريتنا  
امراة عالمة وغنية جدا تسمى ايوسطا واحبتنا كمثل اولادها الخصيصين  
وادبتنا بكافة علوم اليونانيين ولها كبرنا اتعلمنا ايضا الفلسفة لكى  
5 نوعظ ونعلم الامر لكى نقتادهم الى الامانة الحسنة وكنا مشتاقين  
بان نتعلم غش الاصنام والباطلات وبعد هذا اتفقنا مع انسان يدعى  
Recog. VII. 33 سيمن لانه توهم بان يطغينا على حسب عزمه النجس فلكن من  
Hom. XIII. 8 فعل الله اصطحبنا مع واحد من تلاميذ المسيح يدعى زكا وانه  
علمنا بان تترك سيمن واقتادنا الى رسول الرب بطرس وانه وعظنا  
10 وعمدنا وهكذا نحن نطلب من الله بان يوهلك وانت للمعمودية  
المقدسة فلما اخبروا بهذا عانقا والدتى يبكون بدموع غزيرة وابتهاج  
وحينئذ طلبت انا من الرسول بطرس بان انال المعمودية المقدسة  
Recog. VII. 34 وانه اوصانى بان اصوم ايضا مدة ايام مجاهدين بالصوم واننا تضرعنا  
اليه لكى يعمدنا لانا كنا من حين دخلنا الى المركب لم ناكل  
15 شيا وهكذا شهدت والدتى وتضرعنا ايضا لكى يعمدنا لناكل معنا  
خبزا لنفرح بالروح لانى انا غير معتمد ولم ناكل فى مايدة  
واحدة بالجُملة وان بطرس لكيلا يخطى قدام الله بما انه قدس  
Recog. VII. 37 ولكى يعمل ايضا شهوتنا امرنا بان نصوم كل ذلك اليوم معه وفى  
Hom. XIII. 12 اليوم المقبل لكى نستحق للمعمودية المقدسة وهكذا صنع وبعد  
20 عمادنا اتناول بطرس خبزا وبارك وقدس الخبز وكسره وناوله لوالدتى  
Hom. XIV. 1 اولاً ونحن بعد ذلك واكلنا فرحين وممجدين لله ومن بعد ذلك اتانا  
واحد شيخ وقال هكذا لبطرس لا تطغى يا انسان ولا تصلى فان ليس  
Recog. VIII. 1  
Hom. XIV. 2 لله وجود ولا تدبير اله فلكن نصيب كل انسان فقط وكلما هو مزعم

- f. 192 a  
اولا ان اذهب وانال من رفيقتي صفحا لانها قبلتني من اجل الرب  
واعالتني على حسب مقدرتها لما كانت هذه الفقيرة في عافيتها  
والان فهي مطروحة مخلعة فتعجب بطرس من حسن عزم والدتي  
وامر<sup>١</sup> فاحضروا قدامه المخلعة وانه قال لها هكذا بمسمع الكل ان  
كنت انا اكرز بالحق فانفضي معافاة لكي يومنوا هولاء<sup>٢</sup> الحاضرين 5  
بان الله الواحد خلق العلم كله<sup>٣</sup> فياله من عجب للوقت نهضت  
المخلعة وصارت معافاة بحملتها وسجدت للطبيب وشكرت من احسانه  
كما ينبغي فلما نظرت والدتي ذلك العجب تعجبت هي وسائر  
الحاضرين وتضرعت الى بطرس بان يشفيها ايضا وان بطرس وضع  
يده عليها فشفيت للوقت فحينئذ شكرت والدتي من الرسول واني 10  
انا دفعت للمتقدم في الجزيرة الف درهم من الفضة لاجل انهم  
اقتبلوا والدتي عندهم وامرته بان يفرقها صدقة لاجل محبتي على  
الفقرا والمستحقين واننا سرنا مع والدتي بعد الذي عمد بطرس  
الامراة التي اقتبلتها وغيرها وكل الذين امنوا بتعليم الرسول وذهبنا  
من هناك طايفين من بلد الى غيره الى ان بلغنا الى لالادقية 15  
وهناك استقبلونا اكيلا ونيقيطا وقبلونا كما ينبغي لضايفين الغربا  
وان بطرس لما نظر عظم تلك المدينة وكثرة اهلها عزم بان يقيم  
هناك اياما كثيرة لكي يكرز بقول الايمان وحينئذ نيقيطا واكيلا  
سالوني من اجل والدتي قايلين من هي هذه الامراة ومن اين  
رافقتكم وان بطرس اخبرهم بقصتها من اولها الى اخرها فلما سمعا قوله 20  
لبثا منذهلين ساعات عدة وبعد ذلك صرخا هكذا بدموع قايلين نحن  
هم اولادها فاستينوس وفافستينيانوس اخوة اكليمنطس ثم انهما اخبرا  
قدام والدتهما بكلما جرى عليهما مع النوتية قايلين بان انكسر مركبنا  
Recog. VII. 24  
Hom. XII. 24  
Recog. VII. 25  
Hom. XIII. 1  
Recog. VII. 26,  
27  
Hom. XIII. 2  
Recog. VII. 28  
Hom. XIII. 3  
Recog. VII. 32

<sup>1</sup> Cod. فاحفظروا<sup>2</sup> Cod. الحاضرين<sup>3</sup> Sic in Cod.

- f. 191 b  
Recog. VII. 17  
Hom. XII. 17
- فانى تمسكت بدفة وبها وصلت الى البر وكنت ارتعد وكان  
نصفى مايتا ولما صار النهار فتشت على اولادى فلم اجدهم فاتوا  
اقوام فلاحين فوجدونى عريانة فكسونى وعزونى وجابونى الى هذه  
القرية واخذتنى امراة ارملة فقيرة الى بيتها وكانت فى كل  
5 يوم تعزىنى قايلة بان رجلها كان نوتيا وغرق فى البحر وانا فمن  
كثرة حزنى وارتعاد يداى كنت اضبط بهدى عصاة ومن هذه  
الجبهة توسوست وهذه الامراة التى قبلتنى فهى فى امراض عظيمة  
وهى ملقاة طريحة فى منزلها لم تقدر ان تتحرك وليس لنا شيا  
نعيش منه غير من صدقة يسيرة يعطونا اياها الناس ونحن  
10 مستسيرين بضيقة عظيمة معا فلما سمع بطرس كلامها عرف بانها  
والدتى فسألها قايلة وماذا كان يدعى رجلك وولديكى وما هى  
اسماوهم فقالت له اما رجلى فكان يدعى فافسطس واما اولادى فهم  
فافستينوس وافاستينيانوس والصغير يدعى اكليمينطس وتممت خبرها  
فقال لها بطرس بهدى الله ايتها الامراة لانك فى هذا اليوم تنظرين  
15 ولدك واوصاها بان لا تعمل قلقا الى ان نخرج من الجزيرة ثم  
مسك بيدها وجابها الى المركب ولما نظرت انا بطرس كيف  
يقتاد الامراة تبسمت ولم اعلم العلة فذهبت انا لاستقبله واعمل له  
الكرام واضبط يده وان بطرس قال لها هذا هو اكليمينطس وانها  
عانقتنى وقبلتنى وهى باكية ولما انا فانى غضبت لاجل انى  
20 لم اعلم السبب فقال لى بطرس اترك امك لتمتع فيك فلما  
سمعت انا ذلك بكيت وسقطت اقبل قدميها وان كل<sup>1</sup> الحاضرين  
تعجبوا منى بانى كيف انا غنى<sup>2</sup> ومنطيقى وولد اناس معظمين.  
ووالدتى فهى فى فقر هكذا مقداره واننا اردنا بان نذهب  
من تلك الجزيرة فقال بطرس لوالدتى لكى تدخل الى  
25 المركب لتسير معنا فاجابته اتضرع اليك يا سيدى بان تدعنى

<sup>1</sup> Cod. الحاضرين<sup>2</sup> Sic in Cod.

- الحديد ويعمله مثل الشمع ويصنع حوايج وانية البيت ويدعهم بان  
يمشوا من ذاتهم ويخدمون ساداتهم ويعمل هذا العادم البر غير  
ذلك من الاسحار فلما اخبرنى بذلك اكيلا اتى انسان اسمه زكا  
وقال لبطرس هوذا قد اجتمع ساير الشعب وسيمن جالسا على  
الكرسى وهو متسلح كالمحارب والكافة ينتظرون بان يسمعون جدالك  
فحينئذ اوصانى بطرس لكى اتحنى لاجل انى غير معتمد ليعمل  
هو والرسل صلاة مشاعر ليساعدهم الرب لكيلا يسترجع سيمن الجهال  
وبدا فى الجدال مع سيمن ساعات عدة ولما غلبه بطرس لم يصبر  
لكن هرب الى مدينة صور مخزيا وكان يعمل هناك اسحاره فعلم  
بطرس بذلك فارسل اكيلا وانا لكى نذهب الى صور ونستفحص  
عن سيمن ونكتب اليه الجواب فذهبنا ونزلنا فى بيت الكنعانية  
فرنيكيس ابنة ايوستيس بحسب ما اوصانا بطرس وانهما قبلونا بفرح  
واكرمونا واخبرونا عن سيمن بانه يعمل هناك اسحاره كحسب  
عادته حتى احتسبوه العادمون العقل الله وهكذا كتبنا وارسلنا الى  
بطرس وانه للوقت اتى فلما سمع سيمن بمجيئه هرب الى غير بلد  
ولم يصبر لمجاهرته واقام بطرس الرسول هناك اياما وعمل عجائبا  
كثيرة لكى يخلص الناس من ضلالة سيمن وهكذا بمعونة الله  
استرجع الاكثرين الى معرفة الله ثم اجتاز من هناك على شط  
البحر وذهب الى طرابلس<sup>٢</sup> وشرطن على طرابلس اسقفا اسمه ماروطى  
ثم خرجنا من هناك لكى نذهب الى انطاكية الشام وارسل بطرس  
اكيلا ونيقيطا لكى يذهبوا اولا قدامه ولكى لا يكونوا رفقتنا كثيرين  
فيشكون فينا الذين ينظروننا من الحنفا وانى انا فرحت كثيرا لما  
سكنى معه وكنت مستعدا فى ساير خدمته وانه قال لى اشكر من  
حسن خدمتك وتديبرك ولكن تكون تعرف بانى انا لست احتاج

f. 190 a  
Recog. II. 19  
Hom. III. 29  
Hom. III. 58  
Hom. III. 73  
Hom. IV. 1  
Recog. IV. 3  
Hom. VI. 26  
Recog. IV. 1,  
VI. 15  
Hom. VIII. 1  
Recog. VII. 1  
Hom. XII. 1  
Recog. VII. 4  
Hom. XII. 4

<sup>١</sup> Cod. ظلاله

<sup>٢</sup> Sic in Cod.

f. 190 b  
 Recog. VII. 6  
 Hom. XII. 6

الى مواكل مختلفة فلكن الى خبز وزيت فقط وبقول فى بعض  
 الاوقات ولم اقتنى كما ترانى ثواب ثانية لان كل عقلى فى  
 الخيرات الصالحة التى لاجلها كل خير احتقر من كل نفسى  
 'الحاضرات وبالاخرى لانى انا ولدت من اناس ادنيا وقد ربينا  
 5 يتامى وفقرا انا واخى اندراوس ولم يكن لنا قنية كثيرة فلاجل  
 ذلك اعتدت على المسكنة صابرا على الضيقات فى السفر وعلى غير

Recog. VII. 8  
 Hom. XII. 8

ذلك من شقا الجسد وبعد ما فاوضنى هكذا سالتى عن والدى  
 ماذا يقال لهم وماذا يدعون وامرنى بان اخبره عن جنسهم واسماؤهم  
 على التحرير وانى خاطبته على الحقيقة بذلك قايلا بان والدى  
 10 يدعى فافسطس وهو المتقدم فى اهل رومية ولاجل ذلك دفع اليه  
 قيصر الملك امرأة من جنسه تدعى ماطيديا واولد منها ولدين  
 توم ودعا اسماهما فافستينون وفافستينيانون وبعدهم اولدنى انا الا  
 انى لم اعرف والدتى بالجملة لانها بعد ما ولدتنى بمدة اخيرا  
 نظرت والدتى مناما كما اخبرنى بذلك ابى بانها اذا لم تذهب مع

Recog. VII. 9

Hom. XII. 9

15 ولديها التوم الى غير بلد فاننا نموت كلنا وان والدى وضع امى  
 مع ولديها فى مركب واعطاهم مال كثير وجوار وعبيد وغير ذلك  
 من الاشيا الضرورية وارسلهم الى اثينا لكى يتعلمون الاولاد الكتابة  
 ومسكنى انا عنده فقط ليتسلى بى وبعد سنة ارسل الى والدتى  
 مع اناسا فضة للنفقة الى اثينا وان اولايك ايضا لم يرجعوا وفى  
 20 السنة الثالثة ارسل اخرين وانهم عاودوا اليه فى السنة الرابعة وقالوا

Recog. VII. 10

Hom. XII. 10

له بانهم لم يجدوا امى ولا اخوتى ورفقتهم وان والدى حزن  
 كثيرا وانه وضع مكانه وكلا وتركنى ولرومية والجميع وانحدر  
 فى مركب طالبا والدتى واخوتى ومن معهم ومن ذلك الوقت  
 لم يرجع ولم يرسل لنا كتاب بالجملة وانى ظننت بانه  
 25 من كثرة حزنه عليهم ادركه الموت او اختنق فى البحر

- f. 190a الحديد ويعمله مثل الشمع ويصنع حوايج وانية البيت ويدعهم بان  
يمشوا من ذاتهم ويخدمون ساداتهم ويعمل هذا العادم البر غير  
Recog. II. 19 ذلك من الاسحار فلما اخبرني بذلك اكيلا اتى انسان اسمه زكا  
Hom. III. 29 وقال لبطرس هوذا قد اجتمع ساير الشعب وسيمن جالسا على  
الكرسی وهو متسلح كالمحارب والكافة ينتظرون بان يسمعون جدالكم 5  
فحينئذ اوصاني بطرس لكى اتنحى لاجل انى غير معتمد ليعمل  
هو والرسول صلاة مشاعر ليساعدهم الرب لكيلا يسترجع سيمن الجبال  
Hom. III. 58 وبدأ فى الجدال مع سيمن ساعات عدة ولما غلبه بطرس لم يصبر  
لكن هرب الى مدينة صور مخزيا وكان يعمل هناك اسحاره فعلم  
Hom. III. 73 بطرس بذلك فارسل اكيلا وانا لكى نذهب الى صور ونستفحص 10  
عن سيمن ونكتب اليه الجواب فذهبنا ونزلنا فى بيت الكنعانية  
Hom. IV. 1 فونيكيس ابنة ايوستيس بحسب ما اوصانا بطرس وانهما قبلونا بفرح  
واكرمونا واخبرونا عن سيمن بانه يعمل هناك اسحاره كحسب  
عادته حتى احتسبوه العادمون العقل الله وهكذا كتبنا وارسلنا الى  
Recog. IV. 3 بطرس وانه للوقت اتى فلما سمع سيمن بمجيئه هرب الى غير بلد 15  
Hom. VI. 26 ولم يصبر لمجاهرتة واقام بطرس الرسول هناك اياما وعمل عجائبا  
كثيرة لكى يخلص الناس من 'ضلالة سيمن وهكذا بمعونة الله  
استرجع الاكثرين الى معرفة الله ثم اجتاز من هناك على شط  
البحر وذهب الى طرابلس<sup>2</sup> وشرطن على طرابلس اسقفا اسمه ماروطى  
Recog. IV. 1, VI. 15  
Hom. VIII. 1  
Recog. VII. 1 ثم خرجنا من هناك لكى نذهب الى انطاكية الشام وارسل بطرس 20  
Hom. XII. 1 اكيلا ونيقيطا لكى يذهبوا اولا قدامه ولكى لا يكونوا رفقتنا كثيرين  
Recog. VII. 4 فيشكون فينا الذين ينظروننا من الحنفا وانى انا فرحت كثيرا لما  
Hom. XII. 4 سكنى معه وكنت مستعدا فى ساير خدمته وانه قال لى اشكر من  
حسن خدمتك وتديبرك ولكن تكون تعرف بانى انا لست احتاج

<sup>1</sup> Cod. ظلاله

<sup>2</sup> Sic in Cod.



f. 189 b  
Hom. II. 13

جملة اقواله هذه بان من الضرورة ان النفس غير مائتة اذ كان الله  
طبعه بان عادل وفايق الصلاح لكى يوفى للصديقين من البشر اذا  
قاموا بان ويحظى كل واحد منهم بها هو مستحق بحسب عمله  
فللصالحين النجاة الحسن والسرور الابدى وللشرار احزان وعقوبات  
5 لا نهاية لها وكل الذين جحدوا هذه ولم يؤمنوا بها فيعتقدون  
بان الله ظالم هو اذ يهمل الحسنيين العبادة فضلا الذين اضطربوا  
على احزان مختلفة فى هذا العالم وعقوبات لا توصف وتوفوا  
بالموت المم بان لا يجازيهم بالنعيم لاجل اعمالهم الحسنة واما  
الملحدين والمتجاوزين الناموس الذين اجازوا ساير حياتهم بالتنعم  
10 والافراج وعند نهايتهم ماتوا بموت حسنا فلا يعاقبهم فى الجحيم  
لاجل قبيح افعالهم ثم قال لى بعد ذلك بان سيمن الساحر مزعم  
ان يرث النار الابدية فلما سمعت انا منه هذه الاقوال تحققت  
بان جميع ما خاطبني به فهو حقا وانى طلبت من القديس لكى  
يعمدنى فقال لى بان اصوم واحتمى مدة ثلاثة اشهر لكى انظر  
15 من كافة الاوجاع وحنيذ تستحق للمعمودية الالهية وبعد ذلك بايام  
سمعت بان بطرس يريد ان يتجادل بمجاهرة مع سيمن الساحر  
وسالت انا لواحد من تلاميذ بطرس اسمه اكيلا عن سيمن الساحر  
وكيف هو فاجابنى قايلا هذا سيمن له بالجملة فعل الشيطان لانه  
يطغى الشعب ويصنع حيلات كانها عجائب حتى ان<sup>1</sup> الحاضرين  
20 ينذهلوا منها لانه يدخل فى النار ولا يحترق ويظهر كائنسر طائرا  
فى الهوا ويعمل الحجارة خبزا وياكلوها ويصير حية او جديا او  
ذهبا ويتحلى بغير ذلك من الاشكال ويفتح ابوابا مغلقة ويحل

Hom. II. 22

<sup>1</sup> Cod. الحاضرين

## RECOGNITIONES CLEMENTIS.

خبر ابينا الجليل في القديسين اكليمينطس بابا رومية الشهيد f. 188 a

في الكهنة فهذا المغبوط اكليمينطس كان من مدينة رومية العظمى  
نسبه من جنس الملوك عالما جدا وحكيما كما توضح ذلك اقواله  
وكتبه لانه تادب بكل حكمة اليونانيين وصار فيلسوفا عجبيا وكان  
اسم والده فافسطس واسم والدته ماطيديان وكتب<sup>1</sup> امور الرسل 5  
وغير ذلك وصار اسقفا لرومية وأنفى من دوماتيانوس الملك فلكن  
هلمر لنورد يسيرا من الكثير الذي شرحه هذا المغبوط اكليمينطس من  
ذلك الذي كتبه الى يعقوب اخا الرب في الرسالة التي اخبره  
فيها عن ساير اموره باستقصا وكيف رجع من<sup>2</sup> ضلالتة الاولى الى  
معرفة الله ونكتب ذلك باختصار مع شهادته لانه هكذا كتب في 10  
مبتدا رسالته تكون تعرف يا سيدى يعقوب بانى انا ولدت وتربيت  
في رومية وحفظت البشولية من صغر سنى متذكرا دايمًا للموت  
وكنيت لاجل ذلك في حزن كثير مفتكرا هكذا في ذاتى وقايلا  
اترى ان نفس الانسان غير مائة وهل يوجد عالما غير هذا<sup>3</sup> الخاضر  
في هذه الافكار وامثالها كنت ادرس في الليل والنهار واجرت حياتى 15  
هكذا بغيض لا يوصف وكنت مرارا كثيرة اذهب الى منازل الفلاسفة  
واسالهم عن هذه الاشيا لاعلم الحق فاقوام منهم قالوا لى بان  
النفس غير مائة وغيرهم قالوا بضد ذلك وغيرهم فقالوا غير ذلك  
وكانت نفسى متجلىة لى اعرف الحق وايضا كنت اطلب من  
الحكما لى اعرف هل يوجد فى تلك الدار عذاب وطرطروس 20  
وجهنم النار يعاقبون فيها الاشرار بعد الموت وهل للصالحين نياحا

Recogni-  
tiones, Book 1.  
c. 1  
Homiliae,  
Book 1. c. 1.

Recog. 1. 3  
Hom. 1. 3

Recog. 1. 4  
Hom. 1. 4

<sup>1</sup> Cod. اوامر <sup>2</sup> Cod. ضلالتة <sup>3</sup> Cod. الحاضر

- f. 188 b موبدا لكى استسير بالفضايل فى هذا العالم<sup>١</sup> الحاضر ولا أعاقب  
 هناك دايمًا وكان عندى وفى قلبى شوقًا مثل هذا لا يفتر فسمعت  
 بان فى بلد اليهودية قد ظهر نبيا عظيما متكامل فى القداسة  
 ريس اليهود وهو يبشر بملكوت الله ويعلم الشعب خلاصهم ويعمل  
 5 عجايبا مذهلة لانه ينير العميان وينهض المخلعين ويقير الاموات  
 ويعمل جرايحا عظيمة مثل هذه ويكرز بان كل الذين يستسيرون  
 بالفضايل فى هذا العالم<sup>١</sup> الحاضر يذهبون الى ملكوة السماوات فلما  
 سمعت انا ذلك فرحت كثيرا وكنت مترجيا بان اعلم ما انا مشتاق  
 Hom. 1. 7 اليه وكان مديح هذا كل يوم يزداد ويثبت الى ان اتى انسان  
 10 من اورشليم الى رومية لعندنا فوقف فى وسط السوق وقال هكذا  
 للجمع يا رجال اهل رومية تكونوا تعرفوا بان اليوم ابن الله  
 يوجد بالجسد فى اورشليم وهو يوعد كل اولايك الطايعين له  
 والذين يحفظون وصايا الله والمستسيرين بالفضايل بان يحتقروا  
 \*الحاضرات ليحفظوا بالباقيات والحياة الدائمة ويجب ان يعرفون بان  
 15 الثالث الاها واحد ويامر لكل الساكنين فى العالم بان لا يظلموا  
 ذواتهم ويتوبوا كلهم عن خطاياهم لكيلا يلقوا فى النار التى لا  
 تطفى ويلبثون فيها بجملتهم بلا اضمحلال فلما سمعت انا هذه  
 البشارة الحلوة فرحت جدا وتهللت نفسى وتركت للوقت كل  
 Hom. 1. 8 اضطرابات العالم فوجدت مركبا قد دخلت فيه وعزمت بان اذهب  
 20 الى اورشليم لكى احظى بها انا مشتاق اليه واسمع الحقايق من  
 فيه فلما سرنا اصابتنا هوا مضادا فتعوقنا ووصلنا الى الاسكندرية  
 وهناك سالت عنها شرحته اعلاه فسمعت من كثيرين بان جميع  
 ما قالوه عنه من اجل هذه العجايب وغيرها فهو حقا وكان

<sup>١</sup> Cod. الحاضر<sup>٢</sup> Cod. الحاضرات

## RECOGNITIONES CLEMENTIS.

- f. 188 a خبر ابينا الجليل في القديسين اكليمينطس بابا رومية الشهيد  
في الكهنة فهذا المغبوط اكليمينطس كان من مدينة رومية العظمى  
نسبه من جنس الملوك عالما جدا وحكيما كما توضح ذلك اقواله  
وكتبه لانه تادب بكل حكمة اليونانيين وصار فيلسوفا عجيبا وكان  
اسم والده فافسطس واسم والدته ماطتيديان وكتب<sup>1</sup> امور الرسل 5  
وغير ذلك وصار اسقفا لرومية وأنفى من دوماتيانوس الملك فلكن  
هلمر لنورد يسيرا من الكثير الذى شرحه هذا المغبوط اكليمينطس من  
ذلك الذى كتبه الى يعقوب اخا الرب فى الرسالة التى اخبره  
فيها عن ساير اموره باستقصا وكيف رجع من<sup>2</sup> ضلالتة الاولى الى  
معرفة الله ونكتب ذلك باختصار مع شهادته لانه هكذا كتب فى 10  
مبتدا رسالته تكون تعرف يا سيدى يعقوب بانى انا ولدت وتربيت  
فى رومية وحفظت البشولية من صغر سنى متذكرا دايبا للموت  
وكننت لاجل ذلك فى حزن كثير مفتكرا هكذا فى ذاتى وقايلا  
اترى ان نفس الانسان غير مائتة وهل يوجد عالما غير هذا<sup>3</sup> الحاضر  
فهذه الافكار وامثالها كنت ادرس فى الليل والنهار واجرت حياتى 15  
هكذا بغيب لا يوصف وكننت مرارا كثيرة اذهب الى منازل الفلاسفة  
واسالهم عن هذه الاشيا لاعلم الحق فاقوام منهم قالوا لى بان  
النفس غير مائتة وغيرهم قالوا بصد ذلك وغيرهم فقالوا غير ذلك  
وكانت نفسى متجلدة لكى اعرف الحق وايضا كنت اطلب من  
الحكما لكى اعرف هل يوجد فى تلك الدار عذاب وطرطروس 20  
وجهنم النار يعاقبون فيها الاشرار بعد الموت وهل للصالحين نياحا

Recogni-  
tiones, Book 1.  
c. 1  
Homiliae,  
Book 1. c. 1.

Recog. 1. 3  
Hom. 1. 3

Recog. 1. 4  
Hom. 1. 4

<sup>1</sup> Cod. الامر <sup>2</sup> Cod. ظلالته <sup>3</sup> Cod. الحاضر

خبر اكليمينطس بابا رومية  
من النسخة الموجودة في لندن  
المكتوبه في سنة ١٦٥٩  
تجسد المسيح  
كتبه ماكارىوس الانطاكي  
واخرجه من اللغة الرومية الى اللغة العربية

على المنياد استخاضاك وصلينا فادسبح لله  
 قاعد بصر النيا ونفس من الصلاة فوجد ما  
 صلينا اقل النيا بلو منا ونقول انه كل شئ بالحق  
 يكون وان الدعاء الصلاة باكله فتوبنا  
 ثلثة ايام نفعه على ان يصرف رايه من هذا الامر  
 وفي ذلك عند كلنا اياه كما يدعيه  
 يا ابنه وهو كان يدعيه يا اولاد الله وذلك  
 كان يدعيه من الله لانه كان يدعيه تعفنا به هذه  
 الكلمه فقال جوسر لي ولتفكر الهاتد عوامهم  
 العريب اب فقال لي احي لا تائف من ذلك  
 فاكثر باليه القول وهو يدعيه ذلك وقال  
 اما الكلام فقد افعى ولا كني انا مع كني مني  
 الذي كان لهم وختمهم في الفسوف صرحت

RECOGNITIONES CLEMENTIS. From No. 508.

(From a photograph by A. S. Lewis.)







فى كل مدينة طالبنى وعند ما كانت تصبح هاكذا وثب  
الشيخ مسرع اليها بالدموع وعانقوا بعضهم بعض فبعد هذا كله  
اطلق بطرس جماعة الناس وامرهم ان ياتوه بالغداة ويسمعوا  
الحديث : فاذا برجل من اشراف قدم بامراته واولاده يسلنا ان  
5 نصير الى منزله ولم يقبل بطرس ذلك منه ففى ذلك اذا<sup>١</sup> باهنة  
الرجل معترة بشيطان كان بها منذ عشرين سنة فمن ذلك كانت  
مربوطة بالسلاسل محبوسة فى بيت وانفتح البيت بغتة وتهتكت  
السلاسل وخرج الشيطان عنها فقدمت الجارية وسجدت لبطرس  
وقالت ايه السيد انها جيتك اليوم لحال خلاصى فلا تحزنى ولا  
10 لوالدى : فسالهم بطرس عن الجارية فبهتوا والديها عندما<sup>٢</sup> راوا  
السلاسل قد سقطت عنها وطلبتها الى بطرس واشفق عليها بطرس  
وامرنا ان نصير الى منزله وفى الغد قدم الينا ابونا وفعل كل  
ما امره به بطرس واجرينا الكلام على ان يكون اليقين بالمناظرة  
فبعد كلام كثير جدا فى تبكيت الجهالة فامر بطرس لابونا ان لا  
15 يمكث على غير الواجب لله فى الدين زمانا بل يتوب لان اجل  
الحياة قريب ليس للمشايخ فقط الا وللشباب فانذر الشيخ مع  
جميع الناس ايام ثم انه اعمد الشيخ بسر الاب والابن وروح  
القدس الذى له السبح والمجد الى دهر الداهرين الداهرين امين  
يا من يقرأ صلى على من كتبه يذكرك الرب بالرحمة امين  
20 وجميع المومنين :

١ Cod. باهنت.

٢ Cod. لولدى.

٣ Cod. روا.

- كما انها زعمت انها رات فى احلامها فلما ان سمعت هذا  
 IX. 34  
 Hom. XIV. 8  
 منه قلت لعله هذا هو والذى فدمعت عينى فلما ان وثبوا  
 page 31  
 اخوتى يردوا يعانقوه منعهم بطرس وقال لهم اسكتوا حتى يبدو  
 لى فاستجاب بطرس وقال للشيخ ما اسر ابنك الشاب الاصغر فقال  
 الشيخ اقليس اسمه فاجابه بطرس وقال ان انا اوريتك اليوم 5  
 مرتك العفيفة مع ثلاثة اولادها تومن بان العقل العفيف قادر ان  
 يقهر الحركات البهيمة ❖ وان كلامى الذى كلمتك به فى الله  
 بانه حق وقال الشيخ كما لا يمكن ان يكون ما اوعدتنى ❖  
 كذلك ان لا يمكن بلا قضا قال بطرس انا استشهد هولاء  
 الحضر بانى اليوم احضر لك مرتك مع ثلاثة اولادها حية بعفتها 10  
 والدليل على هذا معرفتى اليقين بالامر اكثر منك وانا اخبرك بكلها  
 page 32  
 حدثت لكهما ان تعرف انت ويعلموا هولاء الجماعة كل هذا  
 IX. 35  
 فعند ما قال هذا بطرس جعل يقص قايل ان هذا الرجل الذى  
 تروا ايه الاخوة بكسوته الخلقة هو من اهل رومية من نسب  
 كبير وحسب شريف قريب لقيصر واسمه فسطيانوس وتزوج امرأة 15  
 شريفة واسمها مثادية ومنها صار له ثلاثة اولاد اثنين<sup>1</sup> منها توم  
 والاخر اصغرهم اسمه اقليس وهو هذا وهاذين الاخرين الواحد  
 اجولاس والاخر نقيطا وقد كان اسماهما بديا واحد فساس والاخر  
 فسطيانوس فلما قال بطرس هذا وسماهم باسمهم تحير الشيخ  
 وغشى عليه ووقع اولاده عليه يقبلونه ويبكوا يظنوا انه قد مات 20  
 page 33 IX. 36  
 فبهت الناس من هذا العجب فامرنا بطرس نتحنى عن الشيخ فامسك  
 هو بيده واقامه فحدث الناس كل ما دخل عليه من المصائب  
 وسبب اتفاقهم ❖ فلما علمت بهذا والدتنا اتت مسرعة تصيح وتقول  
 IX. 37  
 Hom. VIII. 9  
 اين زوجى وسيدى فسطيانوس الذى شقى من اجل زمان طويل

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

هذا نقيطا جرت امنا لبطرس وقالت اسلك واطلب اليك ان تعمدي  
 لان لا اعدم يوم واحد من مخالطة اولادى فطلبنا اليه بذلك  
 فامرنا ان تصور ثلاثة ايام ثم انه من بعد ذلك اعمدها فى البحر  
 بمحضر اولادها فاصبنا معها الطعام: وسررنا بذلك بسبح الله وتعليم  
 5 بطرس وللذى صرنا اليه من معرفة امنا وعلمنا بان العفة<sup>1</sup> للامير  
 سبب خلاص فبعد ذلك اليوم اخذنا بطرس الى المينا واستحمنا  
 هنالك وصلينا: فاذا بشيخ ثمة قاعد يبصر الهنا ويتفرس منا  
 الصلاة فبعد ما صلينا اقبل الهنا يلومنا ويقول انه كل شى  
 بالبخت يكون وان الدعاء والصلاة باطل: فثوبنا ثلاثة ايام نقنعه  
 10 على ان يصرف رايه من هذا الامر وفى ذلك عند كلامنا اياه  
 كنا ندعيه يا ابتاه وهو كان يدعينا يا اولادى: وذلك كان  
 تدبير من الله لانه كان ابتدا تعرفنا به هذه الكلمة فقال<sup>2</sup> جولس  
 لى ولنقيطا لما تدعوا هذا الغريب اب فقال لى اخى لا تائف من  
 ذلك فاكثرنا له فى القول وهو فى رايه ذلك وقال اما الكلام  
 15 فقد اقنعنى ولاكنى انا مفكر فى مرتى الذى كان نجمها  
 وبختها فى الفسق فهربت العسق من اجل العار ففرقت فى البحر  
 فقلت له انا اقليمس وكيف تعلم ان المرة لما هربت لم تتزوج  
 بعض العبيد وانها ماتت انا باليقين اعرف انها لم تتزوج لانها  
 كانت عفيفة وبعد موتها اخبرنى اخى عنها كيف عشقته بديا  
 20 وهو بحفاظة اياى واستمسكه بعفته لم يكون يريد يدنس فراشى:  
 فهى الشقية من فزعها منى ومن العار احنالت وليست بملامة لان  
 هذا قضى عليها فذلك اعتلت بمنام راته وقالت لى بانى ان انا  
 اقميت هاهنا هلكت وولديه: فلما ان سمعت ذلك منها لحرصى  
 على خلاصها واولادها ارسلتها وامسكت قبلى ابن كان لى ثالث

VII. 38  
Hom. XIV. 1

VIII. 1 page 29

Hom. XIV. 2

VIII. 2

Hom. XIV. 3

VIII. 8

IX. 32  
Hom. XIV. 6

page 30

IX. 33  
Hom. XIV. 7

<sup>1</sup> Cod. للامير.

<sup>2</sup> Sic in Cod.

- وفسطينيان فلما ان قالت هذا امنا لم يصبروا اخوتى نقيطا واجولس  
ولا كنههم اسر وعانقوها فقبلوها ❖ فقالت المرة ما هذا الامر قال  
بطرس ايها المرة احضرى عقلك هولا هم اولادك فسطس وفسطينيانوس  
الذين كنت تظنين انهما قد غرقان فى البحر كيف هوذا هما  
احيا وقدامك ابتلعهم البحر فى جوف من الليل وكيف يقال 5  
للو احد نقيطا والاخر اجولس ❖ يخبرونا هم الان حتى نعلم نحن  
وانتى فلما قال هذا بطرس وقعت المرة مغشى عليها من الفرح  
فاقبحناها بتعب شديد فعند ما قعدت قالت لنا اطلب اليكم يا  
اولادى الاحبا اخبرونى ما الذى حدث بكم فى تلك الليلة ❖  
فقال اخى نقيطا اخبرك يا امناه انه فى تلك الليلة 10  
عند ما انكسرت بنا السفينة حملونا فى القارب يردون بنا  
البيع فقدفوا بنا الى الارض واتوا بنا الى قيسارية فعذبونا  
هنالك بالجوع والضرب لكيما لا نتكلم شى لا يوافقهم ❖ فابدلوا اسمانا  
وباعونا لمرة يهودية اسمها يسطة فاشتريتنا وادبتنا فعند ما عقلنا صرنا  
الى يقين الامانة بالله فابتدانا بالمجادلة والمحاورة لتبتك طغيان 15  
جميع الامر وتعلمنا اقوال الحكم لننفذ به الحكم والحجج البطالة  
فصاحبنا رجل ساحر يقال له سمعان فصرنا معه بجدا المودة فكاد  
ان يطغينا فبلغنا ان فى ارض يهودا نبيا وكل من يؤمن به يحيا  
بلا حزن ولا موت فظننناه انه سمعان فبعد ذلك لقينا تلميذ لمولانا  
بطرس يقال له زكى فوعظنا جدا وحددنا من الساحر وقرنا الى 20  
بطرس فهدانا الى معرفة الحق ❖ ونحن نطلب الى الله ان يساويك  
ياهل للنعمة الذى صرنا اليها لكيما نمتلى من النعمة فى بعضنا  
بعض ❖ هذا هو السبب الذى ظننتى بانا قد غرقنا فى تلك  
الليلة وظنننا نحن ايضا بانك قد هلكتى فى البحر ❖ فلما قال  
VII. 31  
Hom. XIII. 6  
page 26  
VII. 32  
Hom. XIII. 7  
page 27  
VII. 33  
Hom. XIII. 8  
page 28  
VII. 34  
Hom. XIII. 9

<sup>1</sup> Cod. ياولادى.

<sup>2</sup> Cod. واتو.

<sup>3</sup> Sic in Cod.

- <sup>1</sup> واجولاس<sup>١</sup> ولقيونا وصيروننا الى المنزل فعند ما ارى بطرس الموضع موافق احب ان يقرر هناك عشرة ايام فسالني نقيطا واجولاس قايلين من هذه المرة فقلت لهر هذه هي والدتي<sup>٢</sup> الذي اذن الله لي بمعرفتها<sup>٣</sup> بعناية سیدی بطرس فعند ما قلت هذا اوضح لهما بطرس
- ٥ يقين الامر كيف كان كمثل ما اخبرته انا عن امي كمثل ما سمع هو منها وهو الذي اهدانا الى معرفة بعضنا بعض فلما قال هذا بطرس عجبوا جدا عند ما سمعوا بطرس عن المرة وذكرها
- ١٠ انهيها فسطس وفسطنيانوس وبهتوا من الحديث : فقالوا هل نرى هذا منام هو او حقا ان لم<sup>٤</sup> نكون موسوسين فهو حقا : فضربوا على وجوههم وقالوا نحن هم فسطس وفسطنيانوس فاوجزت قلوبنا عند ما ابتدأت بالحديث وامسكنا حتى نسمع انتها الحديث لانه كثير ما يكون من الامور مشابهة بعضها لبعض : فذهه لعمري امنا وهذا هو اخونا : فلما ان قالوا هذا اعتنقوني ببكا كثير وقبلوني فدخلوا الى امنا فاصابوها نايمة : فقال لهر بطرس لا تيقظوها لكيلا ينقلب
- ١٥ عليها بغثة حراك السرور فتصغر اليها نفسها فلما ان استيقظت امنا اخذ بطرس يقول لها اعلمك ايها المرة بديننا وايماننا بالله نحن نومن به واحد خالق كل هذا العالم الذي يرى ونحن نحفظ وصاياه ونقدس ونبر الوالدين : ونحيا حياة زكية ولا نباشر الامر في طعام ولا في شراب الا ان يعتمدون بسم الاب والابن وروح
- ٢٠ القدس : فان كان اب او ام او مرة او ابن او اخ غير معتمد لا نواكله فلا تغتمى لان ابنك على هذا الا ان تصيرى مثله : فلما ان سمعت هذا قالت وما الذي ينبغي من ان اعتمد اليوم وان اصير الى ذلك لان نفسي قد بغضت الهة الزور لانهم يلهموا غير العفة التي من اجلها هربت من رومية مع اولادي فسطس

vii. 26  
Hom. XIII. 2

vii. 28

page 24

Hom. XIII. 3

vii. 29  
Hom. XIII. 4

page 25

vii. 30  
Hom. XIII. 5

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

<sup>2</sup> Cod. لعناية

- الامر ظننت بانها مصابة او موسوسة فدفعتها عني فقال بطرس لها  
 يا بني دفعت عنك والدتك فلما ان سمعت هذا منه بانها والدتي  
 اضطرب قلبي ودمعتا<sup>1</sup> اعينى وطرحنت نفسى عليها وحر قلبي اليها  
 واخذنى البكا من الفرح والشفقة وقبلتها واقبلوا اليها جميع الناس  
 الذين كانوا هنالك مسرعين ينظرون الى المرة السائلة كيف عرفت 5  
 ابنها فلما ان اردنا الخروج من الجزيرة قالت لى امى يا بنى  
 الحبيب الواجب علي ان اودع المرة<sup>2</sup> التى قبلتنى وهى ايضا مرة  
 مخلعة مطروحة فى المنزل فلما ان سمع بطرس عجب من عقل  
 المرة وامر ان تحمل المرة المخلعة بالسريهر وياتوا بها اليه فلما  
 قربوها قال بطرس والناس سامعين ان كنت انا رسول المسيح 10  
 الان يامنون هولاء ان الله هو الوحيد خالق كل شى<sup>3</sup> فالتقوم  
 هذه المرة صحيحة فلما ان قال هذا بطرس قامت المرة صحيحة  
 وسجدت لبطرس وسالته عن هذه الامور فاقنعها وعلمت يقين الامر  
 فلما سمعوا جماعة الناس عجبوا عجب كثير وكلمهم بطرس كلام  
 فى الدين وفى اخرة قال من اراد ان يستمع اليقين بالله عن 15  
 خلاص نفسه فليصير الى انطاكية فانى قد وهلت الإقامة بها ثلاثة  
 اشهر فانه اوجب من الغربة فى تجارة ارباح الدنيا طلب خلاص  
 الانفس وربح الاخرة فبعد كلام بطرس للناس ناولت المرة التى  
 ابراهها بطرس الف درهم ووكلت بها رجل صالح وكافيت النسوة  
 الذين كلة يعرفن امى وانا سرنا الى انطربوس مع بطرس وامى 20  
 والباقيين فلما انتهينا الى المنزل سالتنى امى قايلة كيف حال  
 ابوك يا بنى فقلت لها من حين خرج فى طلبك لم يعرف له اثرا  
 فعند ما سمعت هذا تنهدت وحزنت فمن بعد يوم خرجنا الى  
 الادقية فلما ان قدمنا اليها فاذا قدام الابواب تلميذين لبطرس نقيطا
- VII. 23  
Hom. XII. 23  
page 21
- VII. 24  
Hom. XII. 24  
page 22
- VII. 25  
Hom. XIII. 1  
page 23
- <sup>1</sup> Cod. عيني      <sup>2</sup> Cod. الذى      <sup>3</sup> Sic in Cod.

بذلك فجعلت تخبره بغير الحق لتأخذ الدوا وقالت له انى مرة  
 من افسس وزوجى من سقلية وابدلت اسما اولادها فنظر بطرس  
 انها صادقة فقال لها انى لقد ظننت بانه سوف يصير اليك اليوم  
 حظ من السرور لانى حسبتك مرة انا عارف بامورها فاقسمت عليه  
 5 المرة قايلة انا اسلك لما اخبرتني بالذى عندك فانه لا اظن ان  
 فى النسا واحدة اشقى منى فجعل بطرس يحدثها بالحق ويقول ان  
 معى<sup>1</sup> شاب لحقى فى طلبه المعرفة باليقين بالله وهو من رومية  
 مع واخبرنى عن اب كان له واخوين تومين وزعران امه كما  
 اخبره ابوه انها ارت بالمنام ان تخرج من رومية مع ولديها لكيما  
 10 لا تهلك مع زوجها فخرجت ولا يدري الى ماذا صار امرها وان ابوه  
 خرج فى طلبها فغاب خبره ايضا ولا يدري ما كان منه فلما قال  
 هذا بطرس وقعت المرة مغشى عليها فتقدم بطرس فامسك بيدها  
 وقال لها ثقى واطمانى واصدقينى ما بك عند ذلك كانها استفاقت  
 من الغشوة ومسحت على<sup>2</sup> وجهها وقالت اين هذا الشاب الذى قلت  
 15 لى فقال بطرس اخبرينى انتى بديا بامرك وانا اريك اياه فقالت  
 انا امر هذا الغلام قال بطرس هل اسمه قالت اقليمس اسمه فقال  
 بطرس هو الفتى الذى قبيل وامرته ان ينتظرنى فى السفينة فخرت  
 ساجدة وقالت اسرع بدا الى السفينة لترينى ابنى الوحيد بانى ان  
 انا رايتته فقد رايت اولادى الغرقى هاهنا فقال لها بطرس انى فاعل  
 20 بك هذا ولاكن اذا انتى رايتته فاسكتى حتى تنزل من الجزيرة  
 فقامت المرة كذلك انا فاعلة فامسك بيدها بطرس وادناها الى  
 السفينة فلما رايتته انا ماسك بيد مرة ابتسمت ثم انى وقوته عن  
 ذلك وجعلت ان اهدى المرة فلما ان امسكت بيدها صاحت صوت  
 كبير باكية وعانقتنى فجعلت تقبلنى فانا لانى لم اكون اعرف

VII. 20  
Hom. XII. 20  
page 19

VII. 21 .  
Hom. XII. 21

page 20

VII. 22  
Hom. XII. 22

<sup>1</sup> Cod. ساب

<sup>2</sup> Cod. وجهها

- page 16 وطرحت انا الشقية مع الموج الى جانب صحرة واشتبتك بها رجا  
ان اجد اولادى احيا لذلك لم<sup>1</sup> اكون اذف بنفسى الى العمق  
واستريح فقد كان هذا لعمري حينئذ خفيف لما احدثق بى من  
الحزن : فلما ان غشاني الصبح جعلت التفت والتمس اولادى  
الغرقى واندبهم وانوح مع بكاء من عند ما لم ارى منهم احد ولا 5  
اجسادهم الغريقة فلما راوئى اهل الموضع رحمونى وسترونى ثم  
انهم التمسوا اولادى فى الغسق فلم يصيبوهم فأتين الى نسوة  
معزيات لى وكانوا يذكروا من المصائب ومن الاحزان ما ابتلين  
به كمثل ما اصابنى وكان ذلك مما يزيدنى الحزن بانه لم تكون  
مصائب غيرى مما تعزىنى : فعزمن علي ان اصير اليهما فصرت 10  
الى مرة فقيرة لما عزمت علي ان اصير اليها وقالت لى كان لى  
زوج توفى ومات غريق فى البحر وخلفنى يومئذ شابه فى سنى  
ومن حينئذ لم اعرف رجل وان كثيرين دعونى الى التزويج فاثرت  
العفة والتقيا على زوجى فهللى ونصير فى حياة واحدة ومعاش واحد  
فساكنتها لحفظها مودة زوجها : فبعد ذلك اشتكيت يدى فيبست 15  
والمرة مساكنتى تجعلت ملقاة هنالك فى البيت فانا حينئذ من  
زمان قاعدة هاهنا سائلة الصدقة لى ولصاحبتى فقد اشرحت لك  
امرى وقصتى فتم لى الان موعودك لكيما تعطينى العلاج الذى  
به يمكنى الوحا من هذه الدنيا مع صاحبتى : فلما قالت المرة هذا  
اكثر بطرس بالفكر وهو حينئذ قاير فقدمت انا اقليمس الى بطرس 20  
وقلت له ايه المعلم الصالح اين كنت وانا منذ حين التمسك اى  
شى تامرنا ان نفعل فقال اسبق وانتظرنى فى السفينة ففعلت كما  
امرنى فاعاد المسلة على المرة وقال لها اخبرنى بهنك ومدينتك  
واولادك واساهم وانا اعطيك الدوا فلم تكون المرة تريد ان تخبره

vii. 17  
Hom. xii. 17

page 17

vii. 18  
Hom. xii. 18

vii. 19  
Hom. xii. 19

page 18

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod. *passim*.



VII. 14  
Hom. XII. 14

page 14

VII. 15  
Hom. XII. 15

page 15

VII. 16  
Hom. XII. 16

الجاك ان تفعلين هذا فقلت المرة سببه هو العجز فقط لو كانت  
لى جرة او قوة كنت قد طرحت نفسى من جبل او فى عمق  
واسترحت من الاحزان والغموم التى آلى جددت بى قال بطرس  
فالذين يقتلون انفسهم هل يخلصون من العذاب امر يصبرون الى  
5 اكثر منه فى الجحيم مع الانفس الذى فعلت هاكذا لقتلها اياها  
فقلت المرة يا ليت انتى ايقنت بان فى الجحيم انفس حية لكيما  
اصير هنالك وابصر احباى ولو كنت بالعذاب ٥ فقال بطرس وما هو  
هذا الذى يحزنك يا مرة اخبرينى فان انا علمت سوف اشفيك  
واقنعك بان فى الجحيم انفس حية واعطيك حيلة لا تحتاجى  
10 معها الى غرق ولا الى غيره فتخرجى من الجسد بلا عذاب ففرحت  
بالميعاد وجعلت تحدثه قايلة انى امراة كنت<sup>1</sup> ذو حسب فابتنى بى  
رجل شريف ذو خطر قريب لقيصر الملك وصار لى منه ولد بن توماس  
وكان لى ولد اخر غيرهما فبعد ذلك عشقنى اخو زوجى فكنت  
اصرفه بحى للعفة ولم اكن انهى الى زوجى حركته<sup>1</sup> السوا لى  
15 فرايت ان لا اطبعه وادنس فراش زوجى معا اتشب العداوة بينهما  
فيصير ذلك لى عار الى جميع جنسى فاجمعت على الخروج من  
المدينة بابنى الى زمان قليل حتى يهدا ذلك الهوا الردى ويتقصى  
عنى الا اذا فخلفت ابنى الاخر قبل ابيه ليتعذى به واحلمت بحلم  
كأنى رايت منام ليلا قايل لى ايه المرة اخرجى مع ولديك من  
20 هاهنا الى زمان اعلمك فيه<sup>2</sup> رجوعك والا فسوف تهلكين مع زوجك  
واولادك ٥ ولذلك فعلت فلما حدثت زوجى بهذا قشعر من ذلك  
ثم قام وحملنى فى سفينة مع اولادى وخدم كثيرين فاموال  
كثيرة فارسلنا الى اثيناس فلما ان سرنا فى البحر قامت علينا  
الروامس وانتشبت الامواج وغرقنا ليلا فغرق كل من كان معنا

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

<sup>2</sup> Cod. رجعوك

- صبيانها ولم يقع على يقين الامر لانه ليس احد يستقصى سعة  
البحر ❖ عند ذلك خلفنى فى رومية ووكل بى وكلا وانا يومئذ  
ابن اثنا عشر سنة وركب من رومية فى سفينة وانطلق الى  
المواضع يطلبهم فحينئذ لم اسمع له خبر ولا كتاب ولا ادرى حى  
هو امر ميت مع انى اظن انه قد توفى فقد مضت له اليوم 5  
عشرين سنة منذ فارقتى : فلما ان سمع هذا بطرس دمعت عينيه  
من الشفقة وقال للذين كانوا معه من المومنين ابتلى بها اصيب  
ابو هذا ❖ يعنى بالمومنين الذين هم غير الامر البطالة الذين  
يتبلون هاهنا بلا ثواب فى الاخرة ❖ لان الذين يجربون هاهنا  
من المومنين فليتركوا ذنوبهم يبتلون به ❖ فلما قال هذا بطرس 10  
استجاب واحد ممن كان حاضر قدام كل وطلب الى بطرس  
قائل اذا كان بالغداة سيرتنا الى جزيرة ارواذا فى البحر حتى  
تنظر اليها ❖ فان هنالك عمودين عظيمين من اعواد الكرم والنظر  
اليها عجب فاذا لنا بطرس ان نذهب وقال لنا اذا انتم بلغتم فلا  
تطلقوا كلكم الى الموضع العجيب جميعا لكيما لا تصيبكم افة ❖ 15  
فسرنا واتينا الى الجزيرة فانحدرنا من السفينة حيث كانا العمودين  
فجعل كل واحد منا يتلفت الى بعض الاعاجيب التى كانت  
هنالك ❖ فاما بطرس عند ما صار الى العمد اذا بامراة قاعدة خارج  
الابواب تسل صدقة ❖ فلما ان ابصرها بطرس قال لها ايه المرة ماذا  
ينقصيك من اعضاك حتى اذا 1 صرت الى هذه القماة لتستعطى ولا 20  
[تستكثري] بها وهبه الله لك من عمل يديك ككتنى ولى به الخبز  
يوم بيوم 3 فتنهدت المرة وقالت يا لهت كانت لى يدين يقدران  
على الخدمة والعمل ولاكنهما فى شبه يدين وهن ميتات وذلك  
لما نهشتها باسانى فاستجاب بطرس وقال وما هو السبب الذى

page 11  
VII. 11  
Hom. XII. 11

VII. 12  
Hom. XII. 12

page 12

VII. 13  
Hom. XII. 13

page 13

<sup>1</sup> Cod. صرتى

<sup>2</sup> Cod. فاتناهدت

page 8  
Hom. XII. 8  
VII. 8

ان تفعله انت فاستجاب بطرس وقال اذن قبلت منك القول لولا  
ان ربنا القادم لخلاص العالم الذى هو وحده الذى له الحسب  
احتمل الخدمة كيما يقنعنا ان لا نستحي بخدمتنا لاختوتنا : وهو  
وضا<sup>١</sup> ارجلى وايدي قايل هاكذا افعلوا باخوتكم فقلت له انا اقليمس  
5 ان انا ظننت انى اقهرك بالكلام فقد سفهت ولاكنى اشكر الله  
الذى جعلك فى موضع والدين فقال لى بطرس هل يكون لك  
احد من قرابة فقلت له فى جنسى رجال هم اشراف يقاربون لقيصر  
المملك : وهو زوج والدتى ذو حسب ومنها صرنا ثلاثة اولاد : توم  
قبلى كما اخبرنى والذى وذلك انى لا اعرفهم ولا لوالدتى الا ذكر  
10 ضعيف وبعدهما ولدتنى امى وكان اسمها مثاذية ووالدى كان اسمه  
فلسطينان واخوتى فسطس وفلسطينانوس فلما صرت فى خمسة سنين  
رات والدتى فى احلامها روبا كما حدثنى ابنى من بعد ذلك ان  
لم تأخذ المرة ولديها من ساعتها وتخرج من رومية وتسافر عشر  
سنين والا فسوف تعطب هى وهما فاما ابنى عندما سمع هذا  
15 حملهم فى سفينة بزاز سرى مع خدم كثير وارسلهم لينقبوا فى  
اثناس وامسكنى انا وحدى قبله ليتعزانى مغنظا بذلك : فلما ان  
مضى سنة بعد ذلك ارسل ابنى الى اثناس مال ونفقات ولكيما يعرف  
حالهم فمضوا الرسل ولم يرجعوا : وفى السنة الثالثة ارسل اخرين  
فى ذلك فانطلقوا وقدموا فى السنة الرابعة يخبروا انهم لم يصيبوا  
20 الغلامين ولا والدتهم فانهم لم يصلوا الى<sup>٢</sup> اثناس البتة : ولم

VII. 10  
Hom. XII. 10  
page 10

يجدوا لهم اثر فلما ان سمع والدى هذا حزن حزين شديد وتحير  
جدا الا يدري كيف ياجد ولا اين [يب]كيهم : فنزل الى ساحل  
البحر وانا معه فجعل يسأل النواتية عن كل موضع غرقت فيه  
السفن من اربع سنين هل يكون احدهم راى مرة غريقة مع

الى اثناس. Cod. <sup>٢</sup> رجلى. Cod. <sup>١</sup>

- هناك ارسل بطرس نقيطا والقيلاس مع اخرين الى الادقية وامرهم  
ان ينتظروه عند باب المدينة : فاما انا وهو فصرنا الى انطروپوس  
فشكرته لانه خلفنى معه فقال لى ان انا جلبتك الى موضع تبتاع Hom. XII. 4  
لنا فيه حوايج هل تموت فاستجبت انا وقلت له انت لى بدل VII. 4  
ابى وامى واخوتى قد صرت لى سبب لمعرفة الحق : فانت ساويتنى 5  
باهل الكبار فكيف تجعلنى فى موضع الخدم : فاستجاب بطرس وهو VII. 5. Hom.  
مازح وقال لى هل تظن انك ليس قد صرت عبدا : فمن يحفظ XII. 5-6.  
على خلعى وشوارى ومن يعد لى الاطبخة الكثيرة المحتاجين page 5  
الى الطباخين وذلك بكثرة الحيل التى احتيلت للناس المونثين VII. 6  
فى رضا الشهوة التى هى الشبع الكثير واكتسى به من الاستكثار 10  
فلا تظن انك تتعرف بشى من هذا اذ انت معى : لانى ما  
اصيب الا اقصد ما يكون من الخبز وشى من زيتون مع بقل  
قليل واما كسوتى كلها فهو هذا الخلق الذى ترى عليه والى  
غيره لا احتاج لان عقلى يرى الخيرات الدهرية ولا يلتفت الى  
شى مما هونا : وانا منك متعجبا لانك رجل مريبى فى نعمى 15  
العالم فزهدت بذلك كله وقنعت باليسير من الامور : واما انا  
واخى اندراوس تربينا باليتم والفقر والشقا واعتدنا التعب ونحتمل  
النصب من اجل ذلك فانا اصبر منك على التعب وعلى خدمتك  
انت لنفسك : فعند ما سمعت هذا منه اقشعرت من ذلك واعتبرت VII. 7. Hom.  
عند ما سمعت هذا من رجل لا تسواه الدنيا فدمعت عينى فعند XII. 7  
ما رانى باكى قال لى لماذا دمعت عينيك فاستجبت انا قايل ما  
اجرمتم اليك لتسمعنى هذا الكلام فقال بطرس : ان كنت قد  
اسيت بانى قلت ان اخدمك فانت اجدر ان تكون قد اسات بديا  
لما لم ترى ذلك ولا سوى فى هذا اما انا فيشبه ذلك ان افعله  
بك : فاما انت ايه الرسول من الله مخلصا لانفسنا لا يشبه ذلك 25  
page 7

1. 1 انطاكية<sup>١</sup> الشام. وكان سبب لقاء اياه هاكذا عند ما كنت فى  
 مدينة رومية فى حدائق<sup>٢</sup> سنى كنت كثير معنت بالعفة والصلاح  
 وذكر الموت والفكر فى النفس هل حية هى ام ميتة وهل هذا العالم  
 كان له مبتدا ام لا وهل يعطل ام لا. فعند ما كنت مفكر فى  
 5 هولاءى لم ازل اراتب موضع الفلاسفة والحكما فلم اكون اجد شيا  
 من الباب اكثر من امر محتال معطل فرايت ان اصير الى مصر عند  
 1. 5. Hom. 1. 5 العرافين بالاموات فلما ان فكرت بهذا اذا بخبر قد اشيع فى ملك  
 1. 6. Hom. 1. 6 طباريوس عن رجل فى ارض يهودا مبشر بملك الله الازلى ويثبت  
 ذلك بجرايح كثيرة فلما كان هذا هاكذا اذا برنابا قد قدم  
 1. 7. Hom. 1. 9 الى رومية يكرز المسيح فكانت الحكماء تستهزى به. فعند ذلك  
 page 3 انا عرفت له بمعنى البر وتقلدت حجته فرفضت بهولايك مثل  
 الكلاب الذى لم يقبلوا كلام الخلاص فاخذت برنابا واضفته عندي  
 1. 10. Hom. 1. 13 وكنت اسمع منه القول فلما ان هم بالخروج الى ارض يهودا  
 خرجت معه وفى خمسة عشر يوما صرت الى قيسارية فاجبرت  
 1. 12 بان بطرس فيها وهو يريد مجادلة سمعان فى الغد فعند ما صرت  
 15 الى منزله ادخلنى برنابا اليه فقبلنى بطرس بمودة كثيرة وفرح كثير  
 1. 13. Hom. 1. 16 عن ما اوليت برنابا فى رومية فاكثرت لى الدعا وامرنى ان اصير  
 اليه وهو يريد المسير الى رومية فلما اوعده بذلك سألته عن النفس  
 1. 14. Hom. 1. 17 وعن العالم فاوضح لى بالاستقصا بالتصايد الجهل الدخيل على الناس  
 20 من قبل الخطية وهو الذى غشى عقول الناس مثل الدخان وشرح  
 لى قدوم المسيح والنهضة الى الحياة. وفى الغد اذا بزكا قد قدم  
 وهو قايل بان سمعان قد وخر المجادلة الى سبع ايام يستكمل  
 بطرس تعليمه لنا عن معرفة العالم كمثل ما اعطته روح القدس.  
 فبعد هذا صرنا الى اطرابلس فى الموضع الذى فيه اعتمدت ومن

<sup>1</sup> Cod. الشام<sup>2</sup> Cod. حدائق<sup>3</sup> Sic in Cod.

## RECOGNITIONES S. CLEMENTIS ROMANI.

بسم الاب والابن وروح القدس الاله واحد ✥ المسيح الاله قوتي  
وعونى ورجاى هذه قصة تعرف اقليس بوالديه واخوته من قبل  
بطرس الرسول راس السليحين المغبوط بالامانة وهذا تعلير بطرس  
السالف المقدس ✥

- 5 عند ما كان فى اطرابلس ✥ ✥ ينبغى ان يوثن الحب فى  
الله وعلى الوالدين والبنون لانه سبب كل شى وانه يعسر علينا  
ان نعلم ما الله ولاكنا نتيقن بانه الله فلا تظنوا بانكم مومنين  
اذا انتم كنتم بلا معمودية لانه منها شخص من الرحمة موجود فى  
10 اله عارف بالمعمدين فى اسر<sup>1</sup> الثالث المقدس المنجى من العذاب  
المستأنف فلذلك اسرعوا الى اله فانه هو وحده القادر ان يطفى  
ذلك النار فلما ان قال هذا انطلق الجماعة فكان عند ما تمت  
لى ثلاثة اشهر معه انا اقليس امرنى ان اصوم ثلاثة ايام فعند ذلك  
صرنا عند منابع<sup>2</sup> امياه على ساحل البحر فعمدنى هنالك و لمرابلس  
معنى الرجل الذى اضافنا ✥ ثم انه سواه اسقف على اطرابلس واثنا  
عشر قسيس مع شماسه ثم انه ودع<sup>3</sup> ودع اهل اطرابلس وخرج الى 15

Recog. Book  
VI. c. 6

VI. 8

Homiliae XI.  
c. 26

VI. 15

page 2

<sup>1</sup> Cod. الثالث

<sup>2</sup> Sic in Cod.

قصة تعرف اقليس  
بوالديه واخوته من قبل  
بطرس الرسول  
من النسخة القديمة الموجودة  
فى دير طور سينا





Tisch.  
p. 454  
page 7

قيصر فخرج وسبى جميع امة اليهود والذين تبثوا فيما بين الامر  
امر ان يستعبدوا الى يوما هذا حتى انه بلغ قيصر ما فعل لوقيانوس  
باليهود فاعجبه ذلك جدا وان قيصر جعل يسل بلاتس عن امر  
يسوع وبعد ذلك امر ان يقطع راسه اذ مديده على يسوع الاله :  
5 وان بلاتس وهو ذاهب الى موضع القتل صلى بسكوت وقال يا ربى  
لا تهلكنى مع اليهود الخبيثا لانى انا لم امد عليك يداى لو لا الامة  
المخالفة للناموس اقاموا علي شغب وانت عارف يا رب انى بهل  
فعلت فلا تهلكنى بهذه الخطية ولا تحقد علي ولا على امتك ابرقلة  
الواقفة مع فى وقت موتى لانك الهمتها النبوة فى الوقت الذى  
10 هويت ان تصلب ولا بخطيتى تدين لجمعية: ولكن اغفر لنا يا رب  
ومع احباك صيرنا فلما تم صلاته اذا صوت من السما قايل الان  
يا بلاتس يعطوك الطوبى كل الاجيال وقبايل الامر لانك تمت  
اقاويل الانبيا من اجلى : وانت شاهد فى قدومى الثانى وساتظهر  
اذا اردت ادين اثنا عشر سبط اسرائيل والذين لم يقرون ويؤمنون  
15 باسمى : وحينئذ قطع السيف راس بلاتس وان ملاك الرب قبله  
فلما ابصرت امراته ابرقلة الملاك امتلت فرحا واسلمت روحها ايضا  
ودفنت مع زوجها فلربنا يسوع المسيح التسبحة والعظمة والمالك من  
الان والى دهر الداهرين. امين :

Tisch.  
p. 455

قيصر فتصير وسبى جميع امة اليهود والذين<sup>١</sup> تبقوا فيما بين الامر  
 امر ان يستعبدوا الى هذا اليوم حتى انه بلغ قيصر ما فعل لوقيانوس  
 باليهود واعجبه جدا وايضا وضع قيصر يسال بيلاطس عن امر  
 يسوع فعند ذلك امر ان يقطع راسه<sup>٢</sup> لانه مديده على يسوع الاله  
 وان بيلاطس وهو جاز الى موضع القتل صلى بسكوت وقال يا رب 5  
 لا تهلكنى مع اليهود الخبثا لانى انا لم امد عليك يدائى لو لا الامة  
 الملعونة المخالفة للناموس اقاموا علي شغب وانت تعلم يا رب انى  
 بهل فعلت فلا تهلكنى بهذه الخطية. بل ولا تحقد علي ولا على امتك  
 ابرقلة الواقعة معى فى وقت موتى التى علمتها ان تتنبى عند الوقت  
 التى اردت ان تصلب ولا بخطيتى تدين لى ولها ولكن اغفر لنا يا رب 10  
 وفى نصيب الصديقين احسبنا وعند ما تم صلواته اتاه صوت من السما  
 قايل الان يعطوك الطوبى يا بيلاطس كل الاجيال وقبايل والامم لانك  
 تمت اقاويل الانبيا من اجلى وانت شاهد فى قدومى الثانى وساتظهر  
 اذا اردت ان ادين اثنا عشر سبط اسرائيل والذين لم يقرؤوا ولم يامنوا  
 باسمى وحينئذ قطع السياف راس بيلاطس وان ملاك الرب قبله 15  
 فلما ابصرت امراته ابرقلة الهلاك امتلت فرحا واسلمت روحها ايضا  
 ودفنت مع زوجها فلربنا يسوع المسيح التسبحة والعظمة والملك  
 الان والى دهر الداهرين. امين ✠

Tisch.  
P. 454

page 17

Tisch.  
P. 455

page 18

<sup>١</sup> Cod. تبقون.<sup>٢</sup> Sic in Cod.

page 6

Tisch.  
p. 452Tisch.  
p. 453

فلما تكلم بهذا قيصر وسمى اسر يسوع جميع اصنام الالهة تواقعت  
وتكسرت وصارت مثل التراب والغبار في ذلك الموضع الذي كان فيه  
قيصر جالس مع جميع وزراءه وان الجمع الذي كان واقف حول  
قيصر فزعوا وارتعدوا وانصرفوا الى منازلهم فزعين متعجبين مما كان  
5 وان قيصر امر ان يستوثقوا من بلاطس الى الغد حتى يتعرف امر  
يسوع بفحص. وللغد جلس قيصر مع جميع جلساءه واحضروا  
بلاطس فابتدا يسله قايلًا اخبرني بالحق يا<sup>1</sup> رشيح انك<sup>1</sup> برشح فعلت  
الذي استجريت تفعله على يسوع والان قد ظهر شر فعلك لان من  
اجله تواقعت الالهة فاخبرني من هو هذا المصلوب الذي اسمه اهلك  
10 الالهة قال بلاطس التذكرة التي رفعت اليك من اجله هي حق وانا  
فقد قنعت من الفعال الذي فعل انه هو اكبر من كل الالهة  
التي نعبد فقال له قيصر فلماذا انت تفعل مثل هذا على يسوع  
وانت لم تجهله لولا انك اردت السو بملكي قال بلاطس من اجل  
خطية اليهود وكثرة شغبهم مخالفي الناموس فعلت هذا. وان  
15 قيصر غضب وصنع مشورة مع جلساءه وامر ان تكتب على اليهود  
قضية هكذا الى لوقيانوس المتقدم في بلد المشرق افزع من اجل  
الجرة<sup>2</sup> الذي كانت في هذا الزمان من اليهود المخالفين سكان  
بيت المقدس وما هو حولها من المدن ومن اجل فعلهم المخالف  
للاموس لانهم<sup>3</sup> لاله يقال له يسوع دانوا وصلبوا حتى ان من  
20 خطيتهم اظلم العالم كله وكاد ان يصير الى الهلاك. فشا ان  
تجمع عساكر وصير الى هناك وضع عليهم الشى وبهذه القضية  
تبيدهم وتستعبدهم في كل البلدان وتنفيهم من بيت المقدس. فلما  
بلغت هذه القضية الى بلاد المشرق سمع واطاع لوقيانوس بحروف لامر

<sup>1</sup> These are Syriac words.<sup>2</sup> Sic in Cod.<sup>3</sup> Cod. لا اله

- وعند ما تكلم بهذا القيصر وسمى باسم يسوع كل جميع اصنام الالهة وقعت وانكسرت وصارت مثل التراب والغبار في ذلك الموضع الذي كان فيه القيصر قاعد مع جميع جلساءه وانه الجمع الذي كان واقف حول قيصر فزعوا وارتعدوا ومضى كل واحد منهم الى بيته بفزع شديد متعجبين مما كان وان قيصر امر ان يستوثق من بيلاطس الى الغد 5 حتى يتعرف امر اليسوع بفحص. ولغد قعد القيصر مع جميع جلساءه واتوا بيلاطس ثم ابتدا يسايله قايلًا اخبرني بالحق يا<sup>1</sup> رشيح انك<sup>1</sup> برشح فذلك الذي استجريت به على يسوع فقد ظهر شر فعلك لان بسببه سقطت الالهة فاخبرني من هو هذا المصلوب الذي اسمه اهلك الالهة اجاب بيلاطس وقال التذكرة التي رفعت اليك فيه هي حق 10 فانا قد قنعت من الفعال الذي فعل انه هو اكبر من كل الالهة التي نعبد فقال له قيصر فلماذا انت تفعل مثل هذا على يسوع وانت لم تجهله لو لا انك اردت السو بملكى اجاب بيلاطس وقال من اجل خطية اليهود مخالفي الناموس فعلت هذا وان قيصر page 14  
Tisch.  
p. 452
- غضب وصنع مشورة مع جلساءه وامر ان تكتب على اليهود قضية 15 هكذا الى لوقيانوس المتقدم في بلدة المشرق افزع من اجل الجرة التي كانت في هذا الزمان في اليهود المخالفين الساكنين في بيت المقدس وما حولها من المدن ومن اجل افعالهم المخالفة للناموس انهروا وصلبوا لاله يقال له يسوع حتى ان من خطيتهم اظلم العالم كله وكاد ان يصير الى الهلاك فانا اريد ان تجمع 20 عساكر وتصير الى ثمر وتضع عليهم الشى وبهذه القضية تبيدهم وتستعبدهم في كل البلاد وتنفيهم من بيت المقدس فلما بلغت هذه الرسالة القضية الى بلاد المشرق وسمع لوقيانوس واطاع بحرف لامر page 15  
Tisch.  
p. 453
- page 16

<sup>1</sup> These are Syriac words.

الذين قاموا كثيرة كثيرة يمشون ١: وانه سلب الجحيم وظهر  
للسوسة وقال لهم ١: قولوا لتلاميذي يقدموني الى الجليل ٢:  
لان هناك يروني ٣: وكل تلك الليلة لم يزل النور ظاهر ٤:  
وكثيرين من اليهود ماتوا في هوة تلك الارض وابتلعوا حتى ان  
5 كثيرين لم يجدوا للغد ممن فعل يسوع ما فعل: وان كل

Tisch. r. a. مجامع اليهود في اورشليم فروا ولم يظهر منهم احدا فلما رايت هذه  
p. 442  
r. b. p. 449 الاشيا المفزعة وبهتت نفسي رفعت الى قوتك وفسرت لك جميع ما

Paradosis فعلوا اليهود يسوع وبعثت الى ملكك ٥: فلما وصلت هذه الرسالة  
Pilati الى قيصر وقريت بحضرة الكل صاروا مبهوتين عند ما سمعوا ان  
10 بخطية بلاطس كانت الزلزلة والظلمة على جميع المسكونة ٦:

وان قيصر امتلا غيظا ووجه فرسان لياتوه بلاطس في وثاق فلما  
اتوا به الى مدينة رومية وسمع قيصر ان بلاطس قد قدم: جلس  
في موضع هيكل الالهة مع جميع اشرافه وكل روساء وامر ان يقدم  
بلاطس ويوقف قدامه فقال له قيصر لماذا استجريت على مثل هذه  
15 الامور الكافرة ٧: وانت قد رايت في هذا الرجل هذه العلامات  
واستجريت على هذا الفعل السوء واهلكت كل العالم بخطيتك ٨:

اجاب بلاطس قائلا يا لقيصر ضابط الكل انا برى من هذا كله وانما  
سبب هذا: ملأ اليهود فقال قيصر ومن هولا قال بلاطس هم  
هرودس. وارشيلائوس. وفلبس. وانس. وقيافا. وكل مجمع اليهود ٩:  
20 فقال قيصر ولماذا اتبعت ارادة هوليك ١٠: قال بلاطس لانها امة شعبة  
وما تخضع لقوتك. قال قيصر فكان ينبغي لك عند ما اسلموه

Tisch. اليك ان تستوثق منه وتوجه به الي ولا تطيعهم وتصلب رجل صديق  
p. 451 الذي قد فعل مثل هذه الايات الصالحة الذي وصفتهم في كتابك  
وانك عند ما اردت صلبه كتبت في لوح هذا يسوع ملك اليهود

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

<sup>2</sup> Cod. سيعوان

- الذين قاموا كثيرة كثيرة يمشون وانه سلب الجحيم موته وظهر  
للسوسة وقال لهم 'قولوا للتلاميذ ان يتقدموني الى الجليل  
لانهم ثمة سايرونى وكل تلك الليلة لم يزل الضو ظاهرا page 10  
وكثيرين من اليهود ماتوا فى هوة تلك الارض وابتلعوا حتى ان  
كثيرين لم يجدوا للغد ممن فعل يسوع ما فعل وان مجامع 5  
اليهود فى اورشليم فروا ولم يظهر منهم احدا فلما رايت هذه الاشيا  
المفزعـة وبهتت نفسى رفعت الى قوتك وفسرت لك جميع ما فعلوا  
اليهود بيسوع وبعثت الى ملكك ❶ ولما وصلت هذه الرسالة الى  
القيصر وقريت بحضرة الناس كلهم صاروا مبهوتين عند ما سمعوا  
بخطيه بيلاطس كانت الزلزلة والظلمة على جميع المسكونة وان 10  
القيصر امتلا غضبا وبعث فرسان لياتوا ببيلاطس فى وثاق فلما  
اتوا به الى مدينة رومية وسمع قيصر بان ببيلاطس قد قدم فعد  
فى موضع قوته وامر ان يقدم ببيلاطس ويوقف قدماه فلما اوقفوه  
قدماه قال له قيصر لماذا استجريت على مثل هذه الامور الكافرة  
وانت قد رايت فى هذا الرجل هذه العلامات الشريفة ثم استجريت 15  
على هذا الفعل السو واهلكت كل العالم وان ببيلاطس اجاب قايل  
يا القيصر ضابط الكل انا برى من هذا كله وانها علة هذا مله  
اليهود فقال قيصر ومن هم هولاء اجاب ببيلاطس وقال هم هيرودس  
وارشيلوس وفيلبس وانس وقيافا وكل مجمع اليهود ❷ فقال قيصر ولما  
تحققت ارادة مشبه اوليك اجاب ببيلاطس وقال انها ايه السيد امة 20  
مشعبة وليس تخضع لقوتك قال قيصر فكان ينبغي لك عند ما اسلموه  
اليك ان تستوثق منه وتبعث به الي ولا تطيعهم وتصلب رجل صديق  
الذى مثل هذه الايات الصالحة قد فعل الذى اخبرت انت فى  
قصتك انك عند ما اردت صلبه كتبت فى لوح هذا يسوع ملك اليهود: page 13

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 442  
r. b. p. 449

Paradosis  
Pilati

Tisch.  
p. 450

Tisch.  
p. 451

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

الارض وصير طين ولطخ موضع عينيه وخلق له عينين يبصر بهما  
وهذا الذى ذكرته جديدا فى عقلى اخبرت به وفى السبت كان  
يعمل يسوع اعجيب افضل من هذه حتى انى قد فهمت من  
عجايبه اكثر مما فعلت الهتنا التى نعبدها : لهذا هرودس وارشيلاوس  
5 وفليس وانس وقيافا مع جميع الشعب. شعب كثير اسلموه الي لكيما  
يهلكوه : فلما حركوا علي الشعب شعب كثير امرت ان يصلب  
بعد ما ضربته بالسياط ولم اجد عليه علة فعل : سوا : فلما صلب  
صارت ظلمة على الدنيا كلها واطلمت الشمس نصف النهار والكواكب  
لم تظهر شعاعا والقمر انكسف وصار نوره مثل الدم وكذلك ستر  
Tisch. r. b. p. 447  
Tisch. r. a. p. 440  
10 هيكل اليهود انشق ومن شدة الزلزلة تشققت الصخور وظهروا فى ذلك  
الفرع الموتى وقاموا كما شهدوا اليهود انهى نظروا الى ابراهيم واسحق  
ويعقوب الاله موسى وايوب : الذى ماتوا كما قالوا هوليك من الفين  
سنة وخمسمائة سنة : وانا ايضا راينا كثيرين ظهوروا فى الاجساد  
وناخوا نوح كثير لما صنع يسوع من الفعل القضيع : وهلاك امة  
15 اليهود وناموسهم : ولم يهدا الخوف من ستة ساعات يوم الجمعة  
الى عشية السبت وعشية يوم السبت صباح الاحد صرخ صوت من  
السما واضت السما اكثر من كل الايام سبعة اضعاف ثلاثة ساعات  
من الليل وظهرت الشمس مضية فى كل السما وكمثل برق الشتا  
Tisch. r. a. p. 441  
20 كذلك ظهوروا رجال عظما بلباس بهى وتسبعة عظيمة وهم كثرة لا  
يحصون صايحين وكانت اصواتهم عالية مثل الرعد العظيم قايلين  
الاله الذى صلب قد قام اصعد وامر الجحيم يا بها المستعبدين  
فى اسافل الارض وانشقت الارض حتى لم يكون لها ثبات وكذلك  
ظهرت امياه الغيق مع صراخ : الذى كانوا فى السما : وكانوا الموتى

<sup>1</sup> Cod. هروس<sup>2</sup> Sic in Cod.<sup>3</sup> Cod. الشبت

- الارض وجعل طين ولطخ موضع عينيه وخلق له عينين يبصر بهما  
 وارسله الى ما سلوان يغتسل به وفى السبت كان ايسوع يعمل page 7  
 اعاجيب افضل من هذه حتى بانى قد فهمت من عجائبه  
 اكثر ما فعلت الهتنا التى نعبدها فلماذا هيرودس وارشلوس وفيلبس  
 وانيس وقيافا مع جميع الشعب اسلموه الي لكيما يهلكوه فعند 5  
 ما حركوا علي الشعب شغب كثير امرت ان يصلب بعد ان  
 ضربته بالسياط ولم اصب عليه علة فعال سوءاً فلما صلب صارت  
 ظلمة على الدنيا كلها واطلمت الشمس نصف النهار والكواكب  
 لم تظهر شعاعها والقمر انكشف وصار ضوءه مثل الدم وكذلك ستر  
 هيكل اليهود انشق ومن شدة الزلزلة انشقت الصخور وظهروا الموتى 10  
 فى ذلك الفزع وقاموا كما شهدوا اليهود انه نظرنا الى ابراهيم واسحق  
 ويعقوب الابا وموسى وايوب الذين ماتوا كما قالوا اوليك من الفين  
 سنة وخميس مائة سنة وانا ايضا راينا كثيرين ظهوروا فى الاجساد  
 وناحوا نوحا كثير لما صنع بيسوع من الفعل القطيع وهلاك امة  
 اليهود وناموسهم ولم يهدا الخوف من ستة ساعات يوم الجمعة 15  
 الى عشية السبت وعشية سبت صباح الاحد صرخ صوت من السما  
 واضت السما اكثر من كل الايام سبعة اضعاف فى ثلاثة ساعات  
 من الليل وظهرت الشمس مضية فى كل السما وكمثل برق الشتا page 9  
 كذلك ظهوروا رجال عظماء بلباس بهى وتسبحة عظيمة وهم كثير لا  
 تحصوا صالحين وكانت اصواتهم عاليات مثل الرعد العظيم الاله 20  
 الذى صلب قد قام اصعد وامر الجحيم يا ايه المستعبدين فى  
 اسفل الارض وانشقت الارض حتى انه لم يكن لها ثبات وهكذا  
 ظهرت امياه الغمق مع صياح الذين كانوا فى السما وكانوا الموتى  
 ظهرت امياه الغمق مع صياح الذين كانوا فى السما وكانوا الموتى

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 447

page 8

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 440

page 9

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 441Tisch. r. b.  
p. 448<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.



ان اخبرك وانا مرتعد ايه القوى لان فى هذا البلد الذى ادبره فى  
 بعض مدنه مدينة يقال لها اورشليم فيها خلق من اليهود وانهم  
 اسلموا الي رجلا يقال له يسوع قايلين عليه ذنوب كثيرة ما لمر يقدرها  
 يثبتوها عليه وبعض ما كانوا يوجبوه عليه انه كان يبطل حفظ السبت  
 5 وكان يفعل<sup>١</sup> شفا كثير واعمال سالحة وذلك انه كان يصير العمى  
 يبصرون: والمقعدين يمشون واقام موتى<sup>٢</sup>: ومخلعين ابرا الذين لم  
<sup>٣</sup> يكون لهم اصلا قوة جسد ولا عروق ثابتة الا صوت فقط ومفاصل  
 فوهب لهم قوة يمشون ويجرون. وبكلمة فقط كان يشفى الامراض.  
 والذى هو اقوى من هذا واعجب انه احيا ميت له اربعة ايام نادى  
 10 به من الموتى وقد نثر من القبح والدود: موضوع فى القبر فامره  
 ان يجرى وليس فيه شى من اثار الموت. لكن كمثل ختن من  
 حجلته كذلك خرج من القبر<sup>٤</sup> وملوا روح طيب وبالحقيقة<sup>٥</sup> مخابرين  
 كان ماواهم فى البرارى وياكلون لحومهم. ويترددون مع السباع  
 والدبابات صيرهم اعفا وحكما وعقلا والارواح النجسة التى تقاتلهم  
 15 وهى فيهم مهلكة لهم رمى بهم الى غمق البحر وايضا رجل اخر  
 كانت يده يابسة ونصف بدنه ايضا يابس بكلمته اشفاه واصرفه  
 صحيحا<sup>٦</sup>: ومرة ايضا كانت تنزف الدم سنين عدة حتى ان عروقها  
 ومفاصلها انحلت من نزيف الدم حتى انها ليس كانت تحمل  
 جسد انسى بل كانت تشبه الموتى<sup>٧</sup> الذى ليس لهم صوت وما قدر  
 20 احد من الاطبا الذين فى البلدان على بروجها لان ما كان بقى  
 فيها رجلا حياة منها ويسوع جازى اخذت قوة وامسكت بطرف ثوبه  
 بين الخلق ومن ساعتها انقوت وبرت وذهبت تجري الى مدينتها  
 بانيا من<sup>٨</sup> كفرناحوم. وكان ذلك منها مسيرة ستة ايام. وايضا رجل  
 اخر ولد اعمى من بطن امه. لم<sup>٩</sup> يكون عينين اصلا فبسق على

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 436  
r. b. p. 444

page 3  
Tisch. r. a.  
p. 437

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 445

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 438

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 446

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 439

\* See note.    ٣ Cod. كفرناحوم.    ٢ Sic in Cod.    ١ Cod. شفا

- ان اخبرك وانا مرتعد ايه القوى ان فى هذه البلدة التى ادبرها فى  
 بعض مدنها مدينة يقال لها اورشليم فيها جماعات لليهود وهم  
 اسلموا الي رجلا يقال له يسوع قايلين عليه ذنوب كثيرة وما لم يقدرُوا  
 ان يثبتوها عليه وبعض ما كانوا يوجبوه عليه انه كان يبطل حفظ  
 السبت وكان يفعل شفاء كثير واعمال سالحة وذلك انه كان يصير 5  
 العمى يبصرون والمقعدين يمشون وموتى اقام ومخلعين ابرا الذين  
 لم يكن لهم اصلا قوة جسد ولا عروق ثابتة الا صوت ومفاصل فقط  
 فوهب لهم قوة ان يمشون ويجرون وبكلمة واحدة كان يشفى  
 الامراض فالذى هو اقوى من هذا واعجب انه اقام ميت له اربعة ايام  
 فى القبر دعاه من الموتى وقد نثر من القيقح والدود فى القبر فامرهُ ان 10  
 يجرى فجرى وليس فيه شى من اثار الموت ولكن كمثل ختن من  
 حجلته هكذا اُخرج من القبر ممثلى روح طيب وبالحقيقة \*مخابين  
 كان مساكنهم فى البرارى وياكلون لحومهم ويترددون مع السباع  
 والدبابات صيرهم اعفا وعقلا وحكما والارواح النجسة التى كانت  
 تقاثلهم وهى فيهم مهلكة لهم رمى بها الى عمق البحر وايضا رجل 15  
 اخر كانت يده يابسة ونصف جسده ايضا كان قد يبس بكلمته اشفاه  
 وخلاه صحيحا وامراة ايضا تنزف الدم وقد انحلت عروقها ومفاصلها  
 من نزف الدم حتى انها ليس كانت تحمل جسد انسى بل  
 كانت تشبه الموتى الذين ليس لهم صوت فلم يكن استطاع احد  
 من الاطبا الذين فى البلدان يشفوها لانه لم يكون بقى فيها رجا 20  
 حياة فتحرّت ويسوع جازى اخذت قوة وبين الخلق امسكت بطرف  
 ثوبه ومن ساعتها انقوت وبريت وبدت تجرى الى مدينتها بانياس  
 من كفرناحوم وكان ذلك منها غير قريب مسيرة ستة ايام وايضا رجل  
 اخر ولد اعشى من بطن امه ولم يكن له عينين اصلا فبزق على

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 436  
r. b. p. 444

page 4

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 437

page 5  
Tisch. r. b.  
p. 445

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 438

page 6

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 446

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 439

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

\* See note.

## ANAPHORA PILATI. B.

بسم الاب والابن وروح القدس اله واحد هذه تذكرة ما فعل  
بسيدنا يسوع المسيح على عهد بلاطس البنطى والى اليهود فى  
سنة ثمانية عشر من ملك طباريوس قيصر ملك الروم: فى تسعة  
اعشر سنة من ابتدا ملك هرودس ملك اليهود فى خمسة وعشرين  
5 يوما خلت من اذار: فى ولاية روفوا وروبيلينوس فى سنة اربعة  
من ولايتهما: على عهد يوسيو بن قيافارس كهنة اليهود وكلما  
كان بعد الصلب واوجاع الرب وفعال ريسا الكهنة وسائر ذلك من  
اليهود وكلما ابصر نقودمس صيره فى كتب عبرانية :

page 2  
Tischen-  
dorf, Ev.  
Apoc. r. a.  
P. 435

فى تلك الايام صلب يسوع بامر بلاطس البنطى وولايته على  
10 فلسطين والساحل وهذه التذكرة فعلت فى بيت المقدس من اليهود  
بالمسيح ورقعت الى طباريوس قيصر فى رومية : قصة رفعها  
بلاطس من اجل ربنا والاهنا يسوع المسيح الى طباريوس برومية :  
فى تلك الايام عند ما صلب ربنا يسوع المسيح بامر بلاطس البنطى  
المتروس بفلسطين والساحل كانت هذه التذكرة بما فعلوه اليهود

Tisch. r. b.  
P. 443

15 بالرب : ان بلاطس رفع الى قيصر برومية كتاب فيه هكذا الى القوى  
المكرمة المهاب طباريوس قيصر: من بلاطس من المشرق اتعاطيت

## ANAPHORA PILATI. A.

- هذه تذكرة ما فعل برنا يسوع المسيح على عهد بيلاطس  
البنطى والى اليهود فى سنة ثمانية عشر من ملك طباريوس القيصر  
ملك الروم فى تسعة عشر سنة من بداءة ملك هيروودس بن روفوا  
ملك اليهود فى خمسة وعشرين يوما خلت من ادار فى ولاية روفوا page 2  
وفى سنة اربعة من ولايتهم على عهد يوسىوس بن قباقرس كهنة  
اليهود وكل ما كان بعد الصليب ومصايب الرب وفعال روس الكهنة  
وساير ذلك من اليهود جميع ما ابصر نقوديمس كتبه بالعبرانية  
فى تلك الايام صلب يسوع بامر بيلاطس فى ولايته على  
فلسطين والساحل وهذه التذكرة فعلت فى بيت المقدس من اليهود  
بالمسيح ورفعت الى طباريوس القيصر فى رومية قصة رفعها 10  
بيلاطس بسبب ربنا والاهنا يسوع المسيح الى طباريوس القيصر برومية  
فى تلك الايام عند ما صلب ربنا يسوع المسيح بامر بيلاطس البنطى  
المتروس بفلسطين والساحل كانت هذه التذكرة بما فعلوا اليهود  
بالرب ان بيلاطس رفع الى قيصر برومية كتاب فيه هكذا الى القوى  
المكرم المهاب طباريوس القيصر من بيلاطس من المشرق اتعاطيت 15

Tischen-  
dorf, Ev.  
Apost. r. a.  
p. 435

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 443

تذكرة ما فعل برهنا يسوع المسيح على عهد بلاطس البنطى  
من نسختان قديمتان موجودتان فى دير طور سينا  
الاولى منهن مكتوبة فى سنة ١٨٣ من سنين العرب  
الاخرى فى سنة ٧ نعرفها

المصنعة التي عند هاهنا. لهذا هم ورسولهم ورسولهم ورسولهم  
 مع جميع الشعب شعب كثر اسلموه اليكم كما بهلكوه. و  
 دبروا على الشعب شعب كثر اسلموه اليكم كما بهلكوه. و  
 بالسياط ولما جاز عليه عليه قتل سوا. فلما طلب صارت كلمة  
 على الدنيا كلها واظلمت الشمس نصف النهار والكواكب لم تكن  
 تتعاقب والفجر انكشف وصار نوره مثل الدم وكذلك شمس  
 اليهود اسبق ومن شدة الولولة استغقت الصور وكهروا له  
 الفرع الموتى فقاموا كما شهدوا اليهود انهم نكروا لئلا يروا  
 واسحق ويعقوب الابا وموسى وابوب الذي ماتوا كما قالوا هو  
 من القبر سنة وخمسماية سنة. وانا ايضا راينا كثير من كهروا  
 الا حسادونا حوا نوح كثير لما صنع يسوع من الفعل الفضيع  
 وهذا ما به اليهود وظلموهم. ولم يهدا الخوف من سنة ساهات  
 يوم الجمعة الا عشية السبعة وعشيه يوم السبت صباح الابد  
 صرح صوت من السماء واصت السماء اكثر من كل الايام سبعة  
 اضعاف منه ساعات من الليل وكهروا السمسم منه في  
 كل السماء وكفّل برق السماء كذلك كهروا رجال  
 عظماء بلبا سري وتبيخه عظماء وهم كثره لا تحصى صائين  
 وكانت اصواتهم عالته مثل الورك العظماء فابليس الاله الذي  
 طلب تدقام اصدوا من الجحيم يا ايها المستعدين في اسافل  
 الارض واستغقت الارض حتى لم يكون لها نبات وكذلك  
 كهروا اميا ما العبق مع صراخ الاله كانوا في السماء وكانوا  
 الموتى الذين قاموا كظنوه كثيره يشوق. وانه سلب الجحيم  
 وكهروا للنسوة وقال لهم قولوا لتلاميذ بيدهم في الجحيم

ANAPHORA PILATI. From No. 508.  
 (From a photograph by A. S. Lewis.)

To face first page of Arabic





.සිංහල සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල  
 .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය  
 .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය  
 .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය  
 5 .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය .සිංහල ධර්මය

Then follows in the MS. the apocryphal correspondence of Herod  
 and Pilate, which has already been published by Dr Wright in 'Con-  
 tributions to the Apocryphal Literature of the New Testament.' Wil-  
 liams and Norgate, 1865.









Tisch. p. 453

<sup>1</sup> Sic in Cod.

4

**Tisch. p. 452**

\* The words **ጸጢ ካብኡል ልዩ** are added on the margin.

**A. P.**











5  
 10  
 15  
 20

1  
 2  
 3  
 4  
 5  
 6  
 7  
 8  
 9  
 10  
 11  
 12  
 13  
 14  
 15  
 16  
 17  
 18  
 19  
 20  
 21  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25  
 26  
 27  
 28  
 29  
 30  
 31  
 32  
 33  
 34  
 35  
 36  
 37  
 38  
 39  
 40  
 41  
 42  
 43  
 44  
 45  
 46  
 47  
 48  
 49  
 50  
 51  
 52  
 53  
 54  
 55  
 56  
 57  
 58  
 59  
 60  
 61  
 62  
 63  
 64  
 65  
 66  
 67  
 68  
 69  
 70  
 71  
 72  
 73  
 74  
 75  
 76  
 77  
 78  
 79  
 80  
 81  
 82  
 83  
 84  
 85  
 86  
 87  
 88  
 89  
 90  
 91  
 92  
 93  
 94  
 95  
 96  
 97  
 98  
 99  
 100

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 441

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 448

<sup>1</sup> The word is wanting in the MS.

- תִּינִי מִן הַלֵּם חֲבֵד כֹּהֵן כֹּהֵן מִלֵּךְ . וְכֵן מִן  
 כֹּהֵן מִלֵּךְ וְכֹהֵן מִלֵּךְ : תִּינִי מִן הַלֵּם :  
 לֵךְ מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . לֵךְ  
 5 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 10 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 15 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 20 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם  
 מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם מִן הַלֵּם . מִן הַלֵּם

page 3

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 447Tisch. r. a.  
p. 440

✓

חלל. למ למלך קמבר ספסו למ ספסו ספסו ספסו  
 ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו  
 ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו  
 ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 445

5 ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 438

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

10 ספסו :

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו :

Tisch. r. b.  
p. 446

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

Tisch. r. a.  
p. 439

15 ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

20 ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו

ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו ספסו



## ANAPHORA PILATI.

൧൨. ഇ ുറു നാലാലാ നാലാലാ  
 നാലാലാ നാലാലാ നാലാലാ . നാലാലാ  
 \* 1൨൦ നാലാലാ നാലാലാ

**Tischendorf**  
**Ev. Apoc. r. a.**  
**P. 435**

**Tisch. r. b.**  
**P. 443**

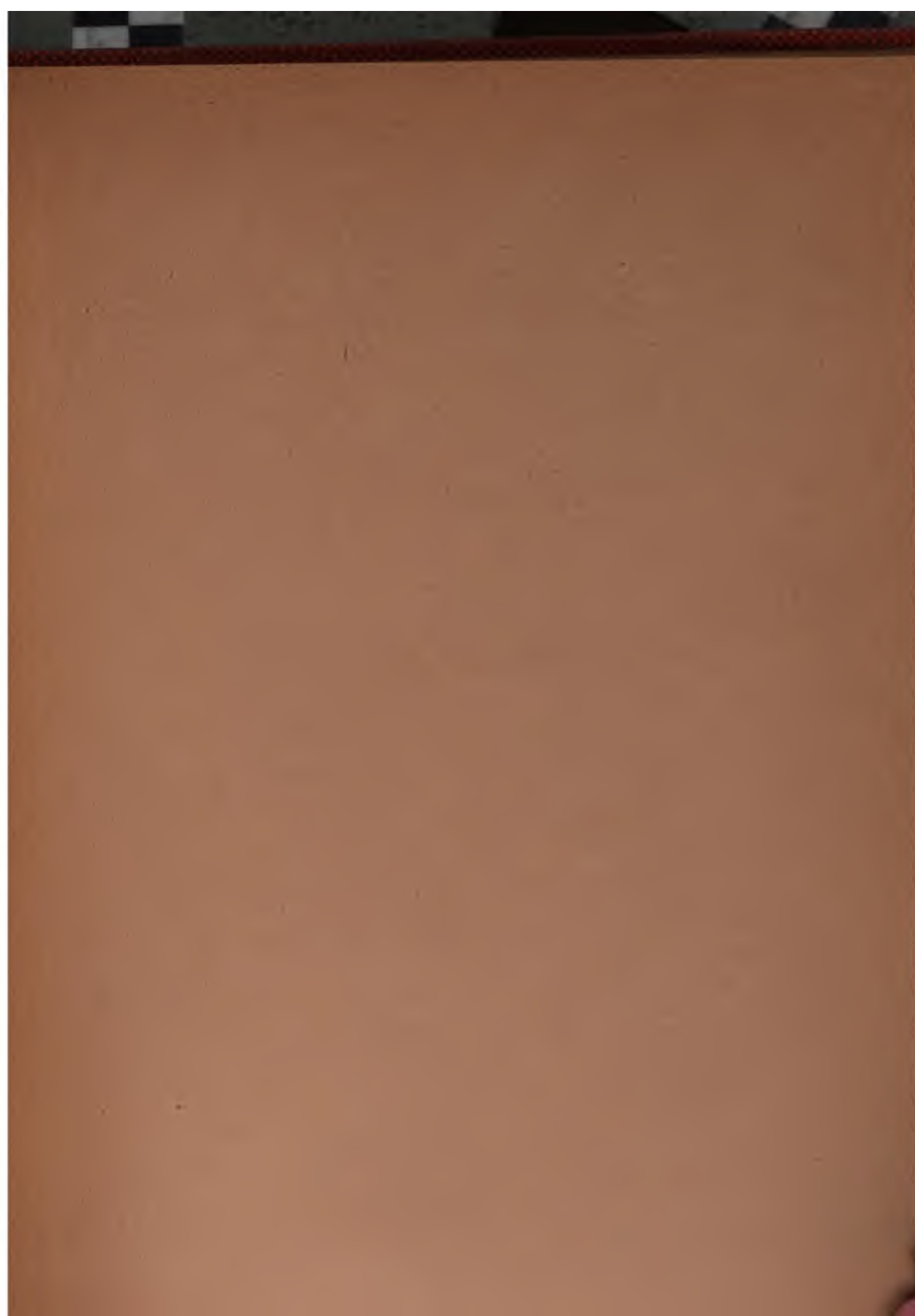
Tisch. r. a.  
p. 436

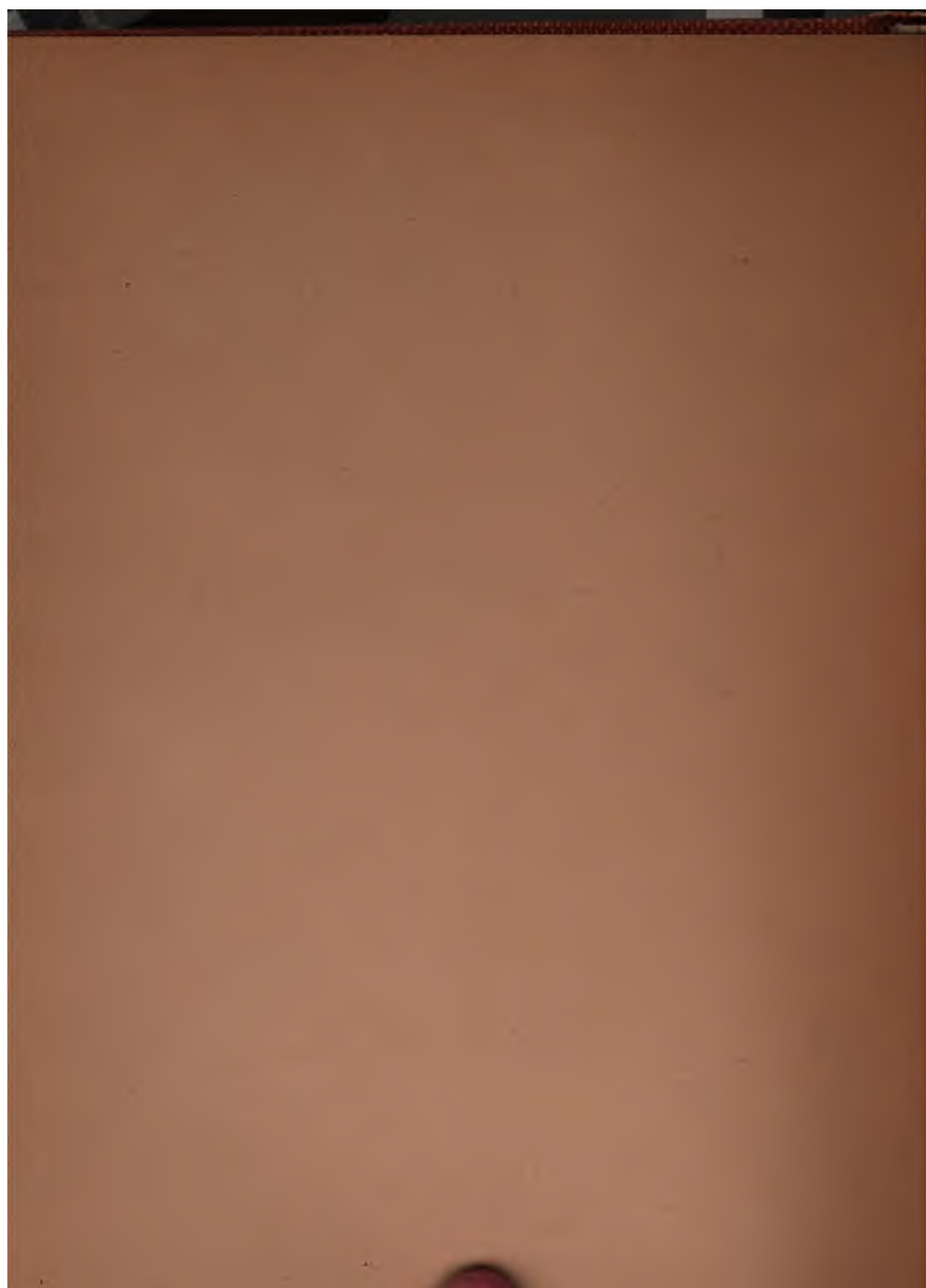
<sup>1</sup> On the margin is added :

ਮਲਕਾ ਕੁਮਾਰੀ ਕੁਮਾਰੀ ਕੁਮਾਰੀ .

<sup>9</sup> Cod. **අභිභවත**









tica	102537	no.5
------	--------	------

[illegible]

